

Maciej Matasek

GRAMATYKA ANGIELSKA

DLA ZAAWANSOWANYCH



TEORIA I PRAKTYCZNE ZADANIA

MACIEJ MATASEK

**GRAMATYKA ANGIELSKA
DLA
ZAAWANSOWANYCH**

HANDYBOOKS

© Copyright by Wydawnictwo HANDYBOOKS
Poznań 2014

Wszelkie prawa zastrzeżone. Każda reprodukcja lub adaptacja całości bądź części niniejszej publikacji, niezależnie od zastosowanej techniki reprodukcji (drukarskiej, komputerowej, fotograficznej itd.) wymaga pisemnej zgody Wydawcy.

ISBN 978-83-60238-39-4

Wydawnictwo HANDYBOOKS
Rokietnica, ul. Legionów Polskich 26
tel. /faks (061) 667 51 06
www.handybooks.pl
e-mail: wydawnictwo@handybooks.pl

Gramatyka angielska dla zaawansowanych to książka adresowana do osób, które poznali gramatykę angielską w stopniu co najmniej średnim. Jest to więc materiał dla tych wszystkich, którzy potrafią zidentyfikować formy czasowe, stronę bierną, konstrukcje bezokolicznikowe, mowę zależną, następstwo czasów oraz inne trudniejsze zagadnienia gramatyki angielskiej. Niniejsza pozycja przyda się tym, których zamierzeniem jest pogłębienie znajomości struktur angielskich oraz zapoznanie się z trudniejszymi lub wyjątkowymi sposobami ich zastosowania.

Książka ta stanowi połączenie kompendium wiedzy o zaawansowanej gramatyce języka angielskiego oraz zbioru ćwiczeń umożliwiających praktyczne wdrożenie nabytej wiedzy, a także sprawdzenie stopnia zaawansowania oraz postępu. Zakres materiału wyselekcjonowany do niniejszej pozycji obejmuje najistotniejsze oraz najbardziej obszerne tematycznie pojęcia gramatyki angielskiej. Szeroko potraktowane zostały tutaj zagadnienia dotyczące form czasowych, czasowników modalnych, trybów warunkowych, konstrukcji z zastosowaniem nierzeczywistego czasu przeszłego, mowy zależnej, form czasownikowych, zdań okolicznikowych oraz dopełnieniowych, inwersji czasownikowej, a także przedimków. Objaśnienia w języku polskim powinny ułatwić zrozumienie wielu zagadnień oraz sposobów i okoliczności praktycznego wykorzystania opisanych form gramatycznych. Kompendium w sposób wyczerpujący oraz dokładny objaśnia zasady zastosowania wspomnianych powyżej pojęć gramatycznych w języku potocznym. Dodatkowo, w wielu przypadkach uwzględnione zostały szczegółowe lub rzadsze przykłady zastosowania, charakterystyczne dla języka formalnego lub pisanego. Część teoretyczna jest bogato ilustrowana przykładami użycia omawianych struktur w języku angielskim. Dzięki nim użytkownik ma możliwość skonfrontowania na bieżąco wiedzy teoretycznej z jej praktycznym odpowiednikiem.

Na końcu każdego rozdziału opisującego określone zagadnienie gramatyczne znajduje się tematyczny zestaw ćwiczeń (EXERCISE BANK), zaś każdy większy zbiór struktur posiada przyporządkowany mu końcowy zestaw zadań (PROGRESS TEST). Na końcu książki znajduje się KLUCZ z odpowiedziami do wszystkich ćwiczeń.

SPIS TREŚCI

1. Czasy - Tenses	7
1.1. Present Simple	7
1.2. Present Continuous	9
1.3. Past Simple	19
1.4. Past Continuous	20
1.5. Present Perfect	26
1.6. Present Perfect Continuous	34
1.7. Past Perfect	40
1.8. Past Perfect Continuous	41
1.9. Future Simple	48
1.10. be going to	49
1.11. Present Continuous - określanie przyszłości	50
1.12. Present Simple - określanie przyszłości	52
1.13. Future Continuous	57
1.14. Future Perfect	58
1.15. Future Perfect Continuous	58
1.16. Konstrukcja be + <i>infinitive/perfect infinitive</i>	63
PROGRESS TEST Czasy - Tenses	66
2. Czasowniki modalne - Modal verbs	71
2.1. Can, could, may, might - przypuszczenie / prawdopodobieństwo	71
2.2. Could, may, might + <i>perfect infinitive</i> - przypuszczenie / prawdopodobieństwo	73
2.3. Can, could, be able to - zdolność, umiejętności, możliwość	78
2.4. Could (not) + <i>perfect infinitive</i> - zdolność, umiejętności, możliwość	80
2.5. May, might, can, could, be allowed to - pozwolenie	83
2.6. Have (got) to, need to, must - konieczność, obowiązek	86
2.7. Didn't have to, didn't need to, needn't have done - konieczność, obowiązek	91
2.8. Should, ought to + infinitive / perfect infinitive - powinność, obowiązek, prawdopodobieństwo	93
2.9. Shall, should - inne zastosowania	96
2.10. Will, would - inne zastosowania	98
2.11. Used to - określanie przeszłości	103
PROGRESS TEST Czasowniki modalne - Modal verbs	106
3. Strona bierna - Passive	110
4. Tryby warunkowe - Conditionals	121
4.1. Tryb warunkowy 0 - Conditional 0	121
4.2. Tryb warunkowy 1 - Conditional I	122
4.3. Tryb warunkowy II - Conditional II	129

4.4. Tryb warunkowy III - Conditional III	135
PROGRESS TEST Tryby warunkowe - Conditionals	138
5. Nierzeczywisty czas przeszły - Unreal past	142
5.1. Wish + Past Simple / Past Continuous	142
5.2. Wish + Past Perfect	143
5.3. Would rather / sooner	144
5.4. It's (high/about) time	146
5.5. As if / as though	147
5.6. Had better	149
PROGRESS TEST Nierzeczywisty czas przeszły - Unreal past	150
6. Mowa zależna - Indirect speech, Następstwo czasów - The sequence of tenses	153
6.1. Zdania twierdzące w mowie zależnej	159
6.2. Sugestie, polecenia, propozycje, prośby oraz żądania w mowie zależnej	162
6.3. Pytania w mowie zależnej	166
PROGRESS TEST Mowa zależna - Indirect speech	170
7. Bezokolicznik - Infinitive	173
8. Gerund	187
9. Bezokolicznik (<i>Infinitive</i>) - Gerund	195
PROGRESS TEST Bezokolicznik (<i>Infinitive</i>) - Gerund	199
10. Zdania dopełnieniowe ze spójnikiem <i>that</i> - That clauses	204
11. Imiesłowy - The participles	207
11.1. Imiesłów czynny - The present participle	207
11.2. Imiesłów bierny - The past participle	209
12. Zdania względne - Relative clauses	212
12.1. Zdanie względne definiujące - Defining relative clause	212
12.2. Zdanie względne nie-definiujące - Non-defining relative clause	216
12.3. Zdanie względne łączące - Connective relative clause	218
12.4. Zdania względne rozdzielone - Cleft sentences	219
13. Zdania okolicznikowe czasowe - Adverbial time clauses	224
14. Zdania okolicznikowe celu - Adverbial clauses of purpose	229
15. Zdania okolicznikowe wynikowe - Adverbial clauses of result	233
16. Zdania okolicznikowe przyczyny - Adverbial clauses of reason	235
17. Zdania okolicznikowe ugody - Adverbial clauses of concession	238
PROGRESS TEST Zdania okolicznikowe - Adverbial clauses	242
18. Inwersja - Inversion	244
19. Przedimki - Articles	250
19.1. Przedimek nieokreślony a/an - The indefinite article a/an	250
19.2. Przedimek określony the - The definite article the	253
KLUCZ	265

1. Czasy - Tenses

1.1. Present Simple

Czas **Present Simple** stosowany jest do opisu:

- (1) czynności wykonywanych regularnie, rutynowo lub z określoną częstotliwością w ogólnie pojętej teraźniejszości np.

Joan starts work at eleven. We clean the staircase twice a month.

Bob drives his children to school every morning. My mom grows tomatoes.

- (2) czynności, które stanowią ogólnie obowiązujące prawidła natury np.

Plants need water and sun to grow successfully. Ice melts above zero.

Human hair becomes grey as we get older. People starve when there is no food.

- (3) czynności będącej formą nawyku, przyzwyczajenia lub zwyczaju np.

Stella always forgets to switch on the indicator when she turns right or left.

John gets up at dawn and practices yoga every day. We give our guests gifts.

- (4) stanu, opinii lub wrażenia (*state verbs*) np.

I don't agree with you this time. Sam believes he has seen a UFO.

We regret that we didn't come to your party. What does this box contain?

Inne czasowniki należące do grupy *state verbs* to m.in.:

ache, assume, be, believe, belong to, bet, consist of, cost, depend, disagree, doubt, feel, guess, hate, have, have to, hope, know, like, look, love, matter, mean, own, possess, prefer, realise, resemble, understand, see, seem, smell, suppose, suspect, taste, think, want, weigh, wish

Tylko niektóre z powyższych czasowników mogą wystąpić w czasie **Present Continuous**, w szczególnym znaczeniu. (⇒ 1.2 str. 9)

Inne przykłady zastosowania:

It feels so good when you kiss me on the neck. It does not matter what they think.

This cake tastes delicious. What do you mean? I guess he is our new teacher.

What do you want to do now? She loves another man. Who owns that villa?

Inne zastosowania czasu **Present Simple** dotyczą:

(5) instrukcji lub oficjalnego planu podróży lub wizyty np.

You open the cover, disconnect the terminal and unscrew the bolts.

On Saturday, we move to Florence and stay there for three days.

At noon, the prime minister gives a speech in the Parliament.

After peeling the onion, you chop it and put it in a bowl.

(6) relacji wydarzeń sportowych np.

Gallard passes the ball smoothly to Rhodes. Rhodes stops for a moment and waits for a defendant to come closer, passes through the defendant and strikes. The ball hits the post.

Komentator może także zastosować czas **Present Continuous**, zależnie od czasu trwania danej akcji lub własnego punktu widzenia.

(7) opisu wydarzeń historycznych, treści filmu, sztuki lub książki np.

In the final scene of the film, the ruthless prince dies in a duel.

In chapter two, the secret agent discovers he is followed by an unknown woman.

September 11, the terrorists hijack four passenger planes and head for New York.

(8) relacji wydarzenia, które zaistniało w przeszłości, dla nadania ‘dynamizmu’ akcji np.

... and then, Mark puts his ear against the door and at the same moment Sue opens it.

(9) opowiadanej żartu np.

A man finds a snail at his doorstep, he picks it up and takes it back to his garden. A few years later, the same man hears knocking at the door. He opens the door, looks around and notices the same snail at his doorstep

Czas **Present Simple** stosowany jest także w nagłówkach gazet np.

A policeman gets shot by an escaping gangster. Peace talks bring no result.

A boy of twelve rescues a drowning woman. The President makes a declaration.

oraz do interpretacji, relacji lub objaśnienia znaczenia tego, co zostało przeczytane, napisane, zaobserwowane lub zasłyszane np.

*This accounts for his incompetence. The book describes the secret life of the tyrant.
Your statement gives a new meaning to the whole case.*

1.2. Present Continuous

Czas **Present Continuous** stosowany jest do opisu czynności:

(1) trwającej - wykonywanej w chwili, gdy jest o niej mowa np.

We are waiting for our bus. Tommy is chopping wood.

The boat is sinking. Look! They are kissing each other.

(2) trwającej, choć niekoniecznie wykonywanej w chwili, gdy jest o niej mowa.

Czynność taka została rozpoczęta, lecz jej czas wykonywania jeszcze nie upłynął np.

I am redecorating my house this week. Tom is getting ready for his exams.

Aby podkreślić fakt trwania czynności, w zdaniu często umieszcza się przysłówki:

now, at the moment, at the present moment, at present, still, just, currently

I am doing my hair at the moment. Alice and Becky are still doing shopping.

(3) wykonywanej w określony sposób tymczasowo lub w drodze wyjątku np.

Only this month, we are renting rooms at half price.

Normally, we stay at work till three but this week we are working till six.

I am standing for Mr Palmer for the next few days, Normally, I don't do it.

Present Continuous może być stosowany z czasownikami opisującymi zachodzące zmiany lub trwające procesy dla podkreślenia ich ciągłości np.

Times are changing and so are people. Youths are getting more and more violent.

The country's policy is undergoing rapid transformations.

They are becoming less resistant.

Present Continuous jest często stosowany z przysłówkami:

always, constantly, continually lub forever

dla podkreślenia czynności powtarzającej się. Zastosowanie to często dotyczy

czynności, która może być irytująca dla osoby opisującej ją, i dlatego tak wyrażone znaczenie może mieć zabarwienie niezadowolenia lub krytyki np.

You are always forgetting about your duties. When will it end, Josh?

This car of mine is forever breaking down. It's a real hassle.

Why are the neighbours' children always screaming?

Czasowniki opisujące stan, opinię lub wrażenie tzw. *state verbs* z racji ‘statycznego’ znaczenia jakie wyrażają, zwykle występują w czasie **Present Simple** (\Leftrightarrow 1.1. str. 7). Do grupy tej należą m.in.:

ache, assume, be, believe, belong to, bet, consist of, cost, depend, disagree, doubt, feel, guess, hate, have, have to, hope, know, like, look, love, matter, mean, own, possess, prefer, realise, resemble, understand, see, seem, smell, suppose, suspect, taste, think, want, weigh, wish

Jednakże, niektóre z powyższych czasowników mogą wystąpić w czasie **Present Continuous** jeżeli zachodzi konieczność podkreślenia faktu, iż dana czynność lub stan trwa jedynie chwilowo lub przez ograniczony okres czasu np.

The boss considers you to be a lazy-bones. (That's his opinion about you.)

The boss is considering laying you off. (He's thinking about such a decision.)

We are depending on you, don't forget about it.

Everything depends on the weather.

Zastosowanie niektórych z powyższych czasowników z czasie **Present Continuous** może wiązać się ze zmianą znaczenia np.

(a) **be**

He is so rough. (normally)

He is being rough. (This annoys me.)

znaczenie takie dotyczy pojedynczego wydarzenia i może mieć zabarwienie niezadowolenia z aktualnego stanu rzeczy.

(b) czasownik **have (got)** występuje w czasie **Present Simple** w znaczeniu ‘mieć, posiadać’. Wyrażając inne znaczenia, może być stosowany w czasie **Present Continuous** - wówczas bez słowa ‘got’ np.

They have a house and a garden. Josh has got a new record player.

Have you got a spare ticket? I have hardly any time now.

lub

We're having guests at two tomorrow. Are you still having lunch?

The boys are having a game of tennis at the moment.

(c) **think** w czasie **Present Simple** wyraża opinię np.

I think this oil painting is a nice piece of work.

Mandy thinks the exam test is too difficult.

Think w czasie **Present Continuous** opisuje sam proces myślenia np.

Gill is thinking about her boyfriend now.

What are you thinking about, Susan?

Czasownik **think** z przyimkiem **of** wyraża:

1. pogląd, opinię – zwykle w **Present Simple** np.

What do you think of / about the new economic policy?

I don't think much of Peter. He's just a lazy good-for-nothing.

2. rozważaną możliwość, ewentualność – zwykle w **Present Continuous** np.

We're thinking of moving abroad. Jack is thinking of having his car tuned.

(d) **smell** – ‘pachnieć, emitować zapach’ w czasie **Present Simple** opisuje stan np.

This milk smells sour. It smells of flowers in the room.

Smell - w znaczeniu ‘wąchać’ może wystąpić w czasie **Present Continuous** np.

'What are you doing?' 'I'm smelling the soup. It smells so fine.'

Podobne różnice dotyczą innych czasowników opisujących czynności narządów zmysłów: **see, hear, feel** np.

I don't see anybody outside. – ‘widzieć’

We're seeing doctor Brown this Saturday. – ‘spotykać’

I can hear you well but do you hear me? – ‘słyszeć’

The police are hearing the witness this afternoon.' – ‘przesłuchiwać’

I feel that this can be dangerous. – ‘uważyć że, mieć wrażenie że’
The surface feels so smooth. – ‘sprawiać określone wrażenie w dotyku’
Are you feeling good, Alice? – ‘czuć się’

W przypadku niektórych czasowników opisujących stan lub opinię wybór czasu **Present Simple** lub **Continuous** nie wpływa znacząco na zmianę znaczenia jeżeli dotyczy ono czynności trwającej w danej chwili np.

I don't feel well. = *I am not feeling well.*

You look pale. = *You are looking pale.*

My tooth aches. = *My tooth is aching.*

EXERCISE BANK

I. Choose the correct answer.

1. It to me that the answering machine is out of work.
a) seems b) is seeming
2. What exactly when you say that your position is at risk?
a) are you meaning b) do you mean
3. It like rain, doesn't it?
a) is looking b) looks
4. Sorry, but this summer we any seasonal workers.
a) are not employing b) do not employ
5. I'll give up my claims if you give up yours. How to you?
a) does it sound b) is it sounding
6. Every now and then, our neighbours a noisy garden party.
a) launch b) are launching
7. I can't stand this job any more. They me the hardest part.
a) always give b) are always giving
8. I see your English Are you taking any extra lessons?
a) improves b) is improving
9. She knows too well she has no chance to win the case. She only to get her money back.
a) is hoping b) hopes
10. Don't disturb us now. We a very important meeting.
a) have b) are having

II. Put the verbs in the correct tense **Present Simple or **Present Continuous**.**

1. I (doubt) whether they (understand) fully what the speaker (talk) about.
2. Whenever Brian (ask) me for advice, I (know) that he (be) in for trouble.
3. We haven't seen each other since my husband went on a mission last month. I (miss) him so much and I (hope) he (miss) me, too.
4. What (Ann/look) like? I am not sure if I (remember) her well.
5. ‘..... (you/enjoy) the party?’ ‘Sure. We (have) a great time. Thanks for inviting us, Bob.’
6. I (not mind) your staying with us as long as you (promise) not to bring strangers home.
7. Normally, Mr Howard (teach) physics but this month we (have) him teach maths as Mr Grant (still/recover) after his car accident.
8. He (say) that he's going to retire, which (mean) we will have to find a replacement for him soon.
9. Don't come at six. I (see) my dentist at that time. I usually (go) to my dentist in the afternoon.
10. Dan is such a bore. He (always/tell) the same stories and (not realize) people are tired of them.

III. Put the verbs in the correct form **Present Simple or **Present Continuous**.**

1. hear a) Can you speak a little bit louder? I (not) you at all.
 b) ‘Where is the suspect?’ ‘The inspector him at the moment.’
 c) These days, we a lot of sad stories from the war site. The situation is becoming more and more dramatic.
2. explain a) ‘He says he was in prison.’ ‘Well, that a lot. Why didn't he say that earlier?’
 b) In his report, the scientist the processes that occur in an infected cell.
 c) Keep quiet, please, while I things to you. If you don't understand them well, you won't make any progress, for sure.

3. spend a) Jason is on holiday. As far as I know he it on a small island on the Pacific.
 b) Because of the recession, this year we (not) so much on advertising as we normally do.
 c) Tom is rather careful with his money. He it only when he needs to.
4. have a) (you) anything more to add or can the case be closed now?
 b) It's ten a.m. My family breakfast. I wish I were with them now.
 c) It's common knowledge that smoking a very negative effect upon human health.
5. weigh a) In spite of being on a strict diet, uncle Frank still the same. He is not a bit thinner than he was last year.
 b) Don't even try to lift these boxes. They over one hundred kilos each.
 c) Look! The nurses our baby. I wonder how much he's put on weight since the last time he was weighed.

IV. Put the verbs in the correct form **Present Simple** or **Present Continuous**.

1. The left defender (kick) the ball out. Ballard (throw) it in at Campbell but the opponent middle player (intercept) the ball. He (pass) it over the heads of our players toward his forward who (chest) the ball down nicely and (make) a hard strike. The ball (hit) the post. Oh, we're saved by now. It's still nil each.
2. Yesterday, Ian told me this joke. A blonde (come) to an appliance store sale and (find) a bargain. 'I would like to buy this TV set.' she (tell) the salesman.
'Sorry, we don't sell to blondes.' he (reply).
She (hurry) home and (dye) her hair, then (come) back and again (tell) the salesman, 'I would like to buy this TV.' 'Sorry we don't sell to blondes.' he (reply) and so she (make) up her mind to go for a full disguise this time

3. In the final scene of the film, the main character (appear) to be alive. He (hide) on a small island and (prepare) for a retaliation. A kung-fu master (teach) him how to fight and he (train) hard. Finally, he (invite) all his rivals for a bloody tournament.
4. The recipe is quite simple. First you (peel) an onion. Then, you (chop) it and (put) it in the pan. While the onion (fry), you (wash) the chicken breasts and (cut) them into thin stripes.
5. The article that you asked us to read (deal) with an event that occurred right before the outbreak of the war. The author (draw) a conclusion that the guerrilla forces gave in without even firing a shot. He even (risk) a statement that the guerrilla leaders had made a secret pact with the invaders.

V. Choose the correct verb for each sentence and put it in the correct form **Present Simple or **Present Continuous**.**

1. look / see / observe
- When she was brought to hospital she was in a bad state. But now after a few days of an intensive care she much better.
 - Keep quiet or you will frighten the eagle away. We it and it doesn't seem to have spotted us yet.
 - 'What shall I tell Adam? I him this afternoon.' 'Tell him that I will phone him next week.'
2. hear / listen to / sound
- 'I can pay you two hundred pounds for your service.' 'It good to me. We have a deal, then.'
 - Our son (not) well. He's had to wear a hearing aid since he was eight.
 - Our new neighbours are so annoying. They (always) music at full volume.
3. ache / hurt / suffer
- It a lot when you tell me you don't love me any more.
 - My doctor has just told me I am pregnant. I to tell the good news to Michael. I wish I'd taken my mobile phone with me.
 - That man's been burnt badly all over his body. The pain he must be immeasurable.

4. consider / realize / think

- a) We need more money to finish building the assembly line and that's why we taking another loan.
- b) 'We've changed the original architecture of the façade recently. What (you) about it now?' 'Well, it looks different, indeed.'
- c) (you) how much trouble you're giving us with that foolish behaviour of yours?

5. discover / explore / find

- a) Thanks to the rapid technological progress, scientists newer and newer methods of treatment of various diseases these days.
- b) 'How (you) my new overcoat?' 'It's gorgeous. Where did you buy it?'
- c) Mr Gordon is a treasure hunter. He sunken galleys and ruins in search of objects of historic value all over the world.

VI. Find mistakes in some of the sentences and correct them if necessary.

1. My heart's aching, darling. Don't leave me now.

.....

2. Wait a second! I am wanting to tell you something important.

.....

3. Don't get offended. We're not meaning anything wrong at all.

.....

4. Don't you think John is being a bit too inquisitive?

.....

5. The position you take depends on the amount of points you score.

.....

6. Sam is never telling the truth to us. What's wrong with him?

.....

7. I don't believe you. You're pulling my leg.

.....

8. Next Monday, we're having the central heating installed.

.....

9. I can repair the tyre right now. It is not costing much.

.....

10. Every time we come for a visit, Mia pretends to be suffering from a bad headache.

.....

11. You don't have to explain it to us. We're all knowing it too well.

.....

12. Look! Someone breaks into your car!

.....

13. We're flying at five thousand feet now and we head for Alabama.

.....

14. I must stay in bed. I am having a bad cold.

.....

15. How many chapters does this book consist of?

.....

VII. Rewrite the sentences using the prompts so the meaning remains the same.

1. Do you happen to know how heavy this load is?

Do you happen to know how much

2. We've arranged to leave at seven sharp tomorrow. (LEAVING)

.....

3. In this profession, physical appearance is not important. (MATTER)

.....

4. What's written on the notice? (READ)

.....

5. The children next door never stop screaming. (ALWAYS)

The children next door

6. We've arranged for new windows to be installed in the building. (HAVING)

.....

7. Brian seems to be getting well.

It

8. He's never satisfied with the job we do. (COMPLAINING)

.....

9. Miss Watson has not finished correcting her speech yet. (STILL)

.....

10. What's the price of the electric saw?

How much

VIII. Put the verbs in the correct form **Present Simple or Present Continuous**.

1. I still (own) the villa but I am planning to sell it next year.

2. We haven't seen each other for ages and so I (look) forward to meeting Jane so much.

3. Do your best. Don't forget we all (count) on you, Jimmy.
4. Despite being a bit too slow, Charles (possess) one very important feature, namely patience.
5. I've been accepted by the Princeton University, which (mean) I will have to leave my parents' house.
6. Next Friday, the President (start) his three-day visit in Italy.
7. What (tell) you that I am lying? Can you see it on my face?
8. According to the recent survey, the number of the citizens satisfied with the new governments' developments (increase).
9. Good morning! This is radio A1. It's five thirty a.m. and the sun (rise).
10. What (make) you think that Mr Goldblum is a secret agent?
11. I've got a high temperature. I think I (come) down with flu.
12. We're about to leave. We (put) on our clothes.
13. What have you added in the salad? It (taste) of some exotic fruit.
14. More and more people (take) to healthy living habits these days.
15. I've told you a thousand times that I have nothing to do with the bribery, but you still (not sound) to be convinced.

1.3. Past Simple

Czas **Past Simple** stosowany jest do opisu czynności:

- (1) dokonanej - zakończonej w określonym czasie w przeszłości. Czas wykonania czynności może być uwzględniony w zdaniu lub pominięty jeżeli zakładamy, iż wiadomo, że czynność została wykonana w przeszłości np.

*Joan returned from Palermo last Saturday. I completed the course in 2001.
We didn't know you were involved in this. How did you learn about my stay here?*

- (2) wykonywanej w przeszłości przez określoną długość czasu, a która nie jest już kontynuowana np.

*Simon worked in the stationery shop for eleven months.
As a child, my father lived in the countryside.
We waited for you for so long.*

- (3) czynności wykonywanej regularnie w przeszłości, lecz już zakończonej i nie kontynuowanej w teraźniejszości np.

*When I was younger, I did physical exercise everyday.
In the nineteenth century, many workers travelled to work on foot.
Tom worked as a postman. He delivered letters to every house in our neighbourhood.*

Zadając pytanie o czas wykonania - zakończenia określonej czynności nie mającej związku z teraźniejszością, należy zastosować czas **Past Simple** np.

*When did Michael tell you about the meeting? What time did you get up yesterday?
When did you and Sally split up? When did the dog bite you?*

Zadając pytanie o długość trwania czynności wykonywanej w czasie przeszłym i nie kontynuowanej w teraźniejszości, należy zastosować czas **Past Simple** np.

*How long did Eva work abroad? How long did they keep the hostages?
How long did you stay in Africa? How long did he run the company?*

- (4) Czas **Past Simple** może służyć do narracji jeżeli opowiadane czynności miały miejsce w przeszłości i nie mają związku z teraźniejszością. Zastosowanie to dotyczy zarówno czynności pojedynczych, jak i wykonywanych przez dłuższy okres czasu np.

It was about six a.m. We got off the train. As we knew the embassy was still closed, we decided to find a nice place to spend the time in. After a ten-minute walk we reached the city center and started looking for a café where we could sit and have a cup of hot tea or coffee. It did not take us long to find one. We got in and sat at a small table near the window. It was so quiet and warm inside. We sat there looking at people walking by when a waiter approached us.

1.4. Past Continuous

Czas **Past Continuous** stosowany jest do opisu czynności:

(1) trwającej wykonywanej w danym momencie w przeszłości. Moment ten może być określony w zdaniu lub nie jeżeli wiadomo kiedy czynność ta była wykonywana np.

At seven a.m. I was still sleeping. At that time we were raking leaves in the garden. Judith wasn't feeling well, so she asked for some medicine.

Czynność taka została rozpoczęta wcześniej i trwała w momencie, do którego się odwołujemy. **Past Continuous** nie opisuje czynności dokonanej - zakończonej w przeszłości. W zdaniu czas lub moment wykonywania czynności trwającej może być określony przez inną czynność dokonaną, wyrażoną przy użyciu **Past Simple** np.

*When I came to pick them up, they were still packing their suitcases.
As we entered the office, we saw that everyone was working behind their desks.*

Czas **Past Continuous** nie jest stosowany do opisu czynności wykonywanych regularnie lub rutynowo w przeszłości. Czynności takie opisuje czas **Past Simple**.

(2) dwóch lub więcej czynności, które trwały lub były wykonywane jednocześnie w określonym momencie w przeszłości np.

*While I was looking at her, she was smiling at me.
Josh was cleaning the carpet while his wife was cooking dinner.*

(3) czynności tymczasowej wykonywanej przez określoną długość czasu np.

*During the whole morning, we were cleaning the paths.
Tom was waiting for you from one till two p.m.
I was repairing the roof all day.*

Opisując czynność wykonywaną rutynowo lub regularnie w czasie przeszłym, należy zastosować czas **Past Simple** np.

They lived in the straw hut all their lives. Rob never complained about anything.

Jeżeli jednak czynność taka była wykonywana jedynie przez pewien ograniczony okres czasu, można opisać ją przy użyciu czasu **Past Continuous** np.

When she was alone, she was crying almost every day. (lub cried)

Before taking the exam, I was doing exercises several times a day. (lub did)

(4) Stosując przysłówki **always, constantly, continually** lub **forever** z czasem **Past Continuous** można opisać czynność powtarzającą się. Zastosowanie to często dotyczy czynności, która była irytująca dla osoby opisującej ją, i dlatego tak wyrażone znaczenie może mieć zabarwienie niezadowolenia lub krytyki np.

As a small child, Mike was always telling lies.

That dog of our neighbours' was continually howling at night.

(5) **Past Continuous** jest także stosowany do opisu zmian zachodzących nieprzerwanie w czasie przeszłym np.

*Things were getting worse and worse. More and more couples were falling apart.
The patient was getting better and better. His temperature was going down gradually.*

Niektóre czasowniki opisujące stan, opinię lub wrażenie (*state verbs*) nie są zwykle stosowane w czasie **Past Continuous**. Do grupy tej należą m.in.:

ache, assume, be, believe, belong to, bet, consist of, cost, depend, disagree, doubt, feel, guess, hate, have, have to, hope, know, like, look, love, matter, mean, own, possess, prefer, realise, resemble, understand, see, seem, smell, suppose, suspect, taste, think, want, weigh, wish

Oprócz szczególnych zastosowań (⇒ 1.2 str. 9) powyższe czasowniki używane są w czasie **Past Simple** np.

You were naughty.

You were being naughty.

It smelled of flowers in the whole room.

Joan was smelling my hyacinths as I saw her in the garden.

EXERCISE BANK

I. Choose the correct answer.

1. When **did you last see / were you last seeing** Tony?
2. As I **came / was coming** into the children's room, they **played / were playing** computer games.
3. First I **was switching / switched** on the light and then I **approached / was approaching** the door.
4. That guy **was always coming / always came** uninvited and we **had to / were having to** ask him out.
5. The medicine the doctor **prescribed / was prescribing** me **wasn't helping / didn't help** much.
6. I couldn't pick up the phone so it **was ringing / rang** all the time **I had / was having** a bath.
7. Before the war, my family **were living / lived** in the south. After the war, we **moved / were moving** to the north.
8. I **walked / was walking** along the road when I **was hearing / heard** someone calling my name.
9. Times **became / were becoming** harder and harder as more and more people **lost / were losing** their jobs.
10. Jimmy **was asking / asked** us not to disturb him as he **was trying / tried** to concentrate before his run.
11. In the military hospital, the doctors **examined / were examining** the wounded soldiers all day and night.
12. I **was keeping / kept** telling Mandy to hurry up as time **ran out / was running out** fast.
13. What was the book that you **read / were reading** when I **met / was meeting** you in the park?
14. When we **were arriving / arrived** at the beach the sun **rose / was rising**. The views were breathtaking.
15. Everyone **listened / was listening** with their mouths wide open while the famous writer **was telling / told** his life story.

II. Put the verbs in correct form **Past Simple or Past Continuous.**

1. I (meet) David in the supermarket yesterday. First, he (not see) me so I (come) up and (say) hello. He (look) a bit surprised to see me but after a moment we (start) talking.

- David (tell) me he (look) for a pair of good snow boots as he (go) skiing the following week.
2. I was just on the point of leaving my office when suddenly the phone on my desk (ring). I (pick) it up and (hear) my boss's voice. He (ask) me to stay longer and do some extra work.
3. That morning our children (wake) up early. When they (come) up to the window they (see) that snow (fall) and the whole playground was white. The neighbours' children (be) already out and they (make) a snowman. Jeff (roll) a huge ball of snow while his brother Tom (throw) snowballs at him.
4. Before going to the party last Saturday night, we (let) Debbie stay up late and watch a comedy on TV. But we (tell) her to switch the TV off when the film (end) and to go to bed. However, when we returned home at about 2 a.m. Debbie (sleep) soundly on the sofa in front of the TV set that (still/play).
5. Someone (call) the fire emergency at about midnight and (say) that a store opposite his house (burn). The fire brigade (set) off immediately but unfortunately as they (rush) to the fire site their engine (collide) with another car.

III. Put the verbs in the correct form Past Simple or Past Continuous.

1. build a. When I entered his room, Eddie a model of an old airplane.
 b. It is said that slaves this marvellous cathedral.
 c. Before the concert, the workers the stage all night without a single break.
2. see a. We're sorry we couldn't meet you at seven. We our lawyer at the time.
 b. There were so many people at the square that I (not) much of the performance.
 c. Harry said it was him who found the wallet but as a matter of fact I it first.

3. make a. I was so glad when I heard the Browns were moving out. Their kids (always) so much noise.
 b. I had to react. I just couldn't stand seeing how that mercenary peddler a fool of you.
 c. We some money only in that short period. Then, the business collapsed.
4. think a. I wasn't asleep when you came in. I about the problems we had to face.
 b. William never of getting married until he met that wonderful woman.
 c. I Gina was abroad, so I was stunned to see her in the shopping centre.
5. have a. We such a nice conversation when suddenly Jamie said she had to leave.
 b. We never problems with Jerry. He was always a good child.
 c. At the time, we our flat redecorated and that's why we couldn't organize the party.

IV. Find mistakes in some of the sentences and correct them if necessary.

1. Whenever I came for a visit, Alice was pretending to be busy.
.....
2. It was looking like rain, so I advised Frank to take an umbrella.
.....
3. Two of us were fainting as we were going down the mountain.
.....
4. When he was a child, Simon was always making a mess around the house.
.....
5. When I heard the alarm I was jumping out of bed and coming up to the window.
.....
6. While the band was playing cha-cha, only two couples danced.
.....
7. Because Tom was ill, I was delivering his mail the whole previous week.
.....
8. What did you watch when the TV set broke down?
.....

9. We and our friends were spending last Christmas at the seaside.
.....
10. Just as I was walking back home a stranger stopped me and was asking for a penny.
.....

V. Put the verbs in the correct form **Past Simple or Past Continuous.**

1. Helen and her husband (always/quarrel) and I couldn't stand it any longer so I (tell) them to move out of my flat.
2. (you/have) breakfast when I (phone) you in the morning?
3. We (live) in this old hotel for a short period but then we (hire) an apartment downtown.
4. It (not matter) how much I (love) her. She (never/feel) happy.
5. The first time I (see) the place I (fall) in love with the countryside.
6. My great-grandfather (establish) the company in 1906 and (work) in it till he (die) in 1976.
7. From eight to ten I (interview) candidates for the job and then my boss (order) me to provide the shortlist.
8. The lifeboat (float) five hundred miles from dry land when a passing liner (spot) it.
9. When I (look) at her, I (see) she (suffer) a lot.
10. The enemy soldiers (fire) at us while we (fly) over their heads but none of their bullets (hit) our plane.
11. We (go) home before the party (come) to an end. Frankly, we (not enjoy) it at all.
12. The priest (make) the sign of the cross on the baby's head and then (pour) the holy water over it.
13. As I (go) out this morning, a cold wind (blow), so I (return) home to find my winter cap.
14. ‘..... (anyone/look) for me while I was out?’ ‘Yes, indeed. Mrs Watson (phone) to make an appointment.’
15. You (sleep) during the whole performance. No wonder then you (not know) what it was about.

1.5. Present Perfect

Czas **Present Perfect** stosowany jest do opisu czynności:

(1) dokonanej - zakończonej niedawno lub w nieokreślonej przeszłości np.

*I have just finished installing the pipe. Five players have resigned recently.
We have hired two new accountants lately. Robert has booked tickets for the flight.*

Czynność dokonana opisana w czasie **Present Perfect** wskazuje na zauważalne lub istotne skutki istniejące w teraźniejszości. Czas wykonania takiej czynności nie jest znany lub istotny np.

*I've just missed my bus. I must wait for another.
You have spilt water on the floor. It's wet all around.
Gina has forgotten her credit card, so she cannot pay the bill.
Jack has broken his left leg and he's wearing it in plaster now.*

Stwierdzenia opisujące wydarzenia, zmiany lub dokonania, które miały miejsce niedawno, a wywierają określony wpływ na teraźniejszość są zwykle opisane w czasie **Present Perfect** np.

*The astronomer has discovered a new solar system millions of miles away from ours.
The pharmaceutical company have produced a new medicine for diabetes.
A new TV channel for children has been launched.*

(2) trwającej lub wykonywanej stale od określonego momentu w przeszłości do chwili obecnej. Moment rozpoczęcia wykonywania danej czynności opisany jest przy użyciu przyimka **since**, zaś długość trwania danej czynności opisuje przyimek **for** np.

*We've stayed in Berlin since last Monday. Peter has worked as a vet since 1999.
She's changed a lot since we met last time. I've had this headache since yesterday.
Tommy's been unemployed for three months. We've known each other for ages.
We've trained hard for the last six weeks. He's kept bees for many years.*

Zwykle zdanie opisujące moment lub czas rozpoczęcia wykonywania danej czynności po przyimku **since** opisane jest w czasie **Past Simple**, ponieważ odwołuje się ono do przeszłości. Jeżeli jednak moment lub okres czasu, przez który dana czynność jest wykonywana trwa nadal, wówczas po przyimku **since** należy użyć czas **Present Perfect** np.

*I have met quite a few nice people since I have been here.
Frank has taken a lot of photos since he's had that new camera.*

Pytając o długość trwania lub moment rozpoczęcia wykonywania danej czynności, zakładając, że jest ona nadal wykonywana należy użyć czas **Present Perfect** np.

*How long have you had the dog? How long have you lived abroad?
How long have the Browns been married? How long has Betty taken care of you?*

*Since when have you known about it? Since when has Valerie worn earrings?
Since when has Mick played professionally? Since when have they advised you?*

Aby podkreślić ile razy dana czynność została powtórzona do chwili obecnej, należy użyć czas **Present Perfect**. Takie zastosowanie zakłada, iż czynność ta może zostać wykonana ponownie w przyszłości. Przyimkami często stosowanymi w tym znaczeniu są: **so far** oraz **up to now** np.

*We've built five hundred houses up to now.
Our grandfather has been in hospital twice since he retired.
So far, you have given me only twenty pounds. You still owe me eighty pounds.*

Trwającym okresem czasu, w przeciągu którego dana czynność została powtórzona pewną ilość razy, może być na przykład nie zakończony jeszcze dzień, pora dnia, tydzień, miesiąc, rok lub etap życia np.

*He's been married five times (in his life).
I have made a lot of new friends this year.
How many times has she phoned this morning?
Janet has been on sick leave three times this month.
The prices of food have gone up three times over the last two months.*

Przysłówki **always**, **every**, **frequently**, **often** lub **never** mogą być użyte z czasem **Present Perfect** dla podkreślenia, jak często dana czynność była wykonywana od określonej lub nieokreślonej przeszłości do chwili obecnej np.

*I have always loved you and I always will.
We've gone fishing every morning for the last week.
Mr Grant has often come for a visit since we moved in here.
We have never gone abroad; we don't know how people live in other countries.*

Powyzsze zastosowanie przysłówka **never** może sugerować zmianę określonej sytuacji np.

*That's wonderful news you've told me. I've never heard anything more comforting.
This is my first time in France. I've never been here before.*

Zastosowanie przysłówka **yet** może służyć do utworzenia pytania, czy dana czynność została już lub też kiedykolwiek wykonana do chwili obecnej np.

*Have you been to Scotland yet? Have you met my husband yet?
Have you read the newspaper yet? Have you seen the film yet?*

Podobne znaczenie wyraża przysłówek **ever** np.

*Have you ever participated in a celebration like this?
Has your husband ever brought you flowers?
Have the Greys ever invited you?*

Przysłówek **yet** w zdaniu przeczącym może służyć do wyrażenia czynności, która do chwili obecnej nie została jeszcze wykonana np.

*We have not visited the gallery yet. John hasn't made up his mind yet.
I haven't finished writing my thesis yet. You haven't told me everything yet.*

Czas **Present Perfect** jest zwykle stosowany w zdaniu rozpoczynającym relację prasową, dotyczącą bieżących wydarzeń. Dalsze szczegóły odnoszące się do określonej informacji są zazwyczaj podawane w czasie **Past Simple** np.

The first photographs of the surface of the planet Saturn have been sent by the probe Voyager II. The probe approached the planet on Monday 14th at about 6 a.m. CET.

A number of people have lost their houses in floods that have occurred in Khashar in India. The river Sithe burst its banks after the heavy rains that lasted two days.

Several people have been wounded in the riots that broke out in Madrid last night. It is said that a group of football fans attacked fans of a rival team who were celebrating their team's victory in one of the pubs downtown.

Czas **Present Perfect** może wystąpić w konstrukcji:

It + is + określenie czasu + Present Perfect

It is seven years since I have visited Paris. = I haven't visited Paris for seven years.

It is ages since we have met. = We haven't met for ages.

W tej samej konstrukcji może wystąpić także czas **Past Simple** np.

It is two years since Tom last invited us. = Tom last invited us two years ago.

It is six months since we last talked. = We last talked six months ago.

EXERCISE BANK

I. Choose the correct answer.

1. Since she **has taken / took** over, she **has introduced / introduces** a number of changes in the department.
2. **Have you seen / Did you see** my watch? I think I **lost / have lost** it.
3. I **have known / know** him for many years but I **never saw / have never seen** him behave like that before.
4. I **always want / have always wanted** to ask Julia for a date but I **have never had / never had** enough courage to do it.
5. ‘Since when **did you live / have you lived** in separation?’ ‘We **have decided / decided** to go our separate ways two months ago.’
6. As a child Tom **never caused / has never caused** trouble but since he **turned / has turned** eighteen, he **is / has been** totally unruly.
7. You **were / have been** nowhere to be found yesterday. Where **have you been / were** you?
8. ‘I **have bought / bought** these earrings for Susan.’ ‘They’re lovely but I’m not sure if she **has worn / wears** earrings at all.’
9. This month we **receive / have received** a number of complaints from our customers but we **haven’t dealt / don’t deal** with them yet.
10. For many years, Mr Parker **has served / served** in the army but since he **retired / has retired**, he **hasn’t put on / doesn’t put on** his uniform once.

II. Put the verbs in the correct form **Present Simple**, **Present Perfect** or **Past Simple**.

1. try
 - a. How many times (Joe) to beat the world record so far?
b. No matter how hard I to win her approval, she never accepts my suggestions.
c. You never really to solve the puzzle and that’s why you never succeeded.

2. make a. I haven't talked to Richard since he these critical remarks about me at the general meeting.
 b. Don't you think our new manager an impression of the right man at the right place?
 c. I am aware that I a few mistakes in the calculations and so I'm going to do them again.
3. rain a. Whenever we go to the seaside on holiday, it invariably
 b. It's been over two months since it last time in this area.
 c. It (not) for over two months in this area.
4. have a. We (not) any news from Brian for months. I wonder how he's doing.
 b. Honestly, I nothing to do with the occurrence. I wasn't even in the office when it took place.
 c. Wait a second! I something important to tell you.
5. see a. What an amazing view. I (never) anything like that before.
 b. Don't tell me you (not) where the problem lies. I've explained it to you a hundred times.
 c. Ever since he Mandy at the party, Jack's had a crush on her.

III. Put the verbs in the correct form **Present Simple, Present Perfect or Past Simple.**

Reporter: Mr Hubbard, how many times (you/climb) Mount Everest?

Hubbard: So far, I (make) at least ten attempts but I (reach) the peak only twice.

Reporter: When (be) the first time you (set) your foot on the top of the world?

Hubbard: In 1985, me and the other climbers from Germany and Holland (stand) at the summit of Mount Everest for the first time in our lives.

Reporter: And the second time (be) three years later. Am I right?

Hubbard: Perfectly right. Me and my Japanese mate (start) from

the eastern side and after a ten-day climb we (arrive) at the peak.

Reporter: Since that time you (try) to reach the peak again but you (fail). Why? What (go) wrong?

Hubbard: Everything (go) wrong. The weather (change) for worse and our oxygen supplies (run) out too fast. In addition to that, our Nepalese guides (give) up for financial reasons. They (ask) for more money but we (not have) it.

Reporter: And you (not try) again since your last failed attempt. Why? (you/give) up climbing?

Hubbard: Of course not. But you see. The losses we (make) last time (put) us in a bad financial condition which (continue) by this day. You know, it (take) some time to prepare an expedition like this and collect the money.

Reporter: Certainly. Thank you very much Mr Hubbard and good luck next time.

IV. Put the verbs in the correct form **Present Simple, Present Perfect or Past Simple.**

1. The government spokesman (just/reveal) that the prime minister (cancel) his visit to China next week for private reasons. Our reporters (find) out unofficially that the prime minister (catch) a cold during his stay in the mountains last week where he (go) skiing with his son and his grandson.
2. Since we (release) the demo version of our new strategic computer game, there (be) hundreds of enquiries from our customers around the world who (want) to know when the full version will be ready for sale. Since much (depend) on financial reasons, we (not set) the definite date of release yet.
3. Here's the latest news. Michael Sparks (die) in his house in Los Angeles. For many years he (work) as a film director and (make) a number of popular films. The best known are *The Guardian*, *The Cherry Moon* and *The Queen's lover*, for which he (receive) the Oscar award in 1978. Recently, Michael Sparks (prepare) plays for the Hall Theatre where he (start) his great career over half a century ago.

4. The Indonesian tanker that (collide) with a Japanese cargo boat this morning (sink). Fortunately, the rescue teams that (arrive) in the catastrophe area after only an hour (manage) to pick up all the crew members and (just/land) them safely in the port of Osaka.
5. No official report (issue) as yet about the recent sightings of some unidentified flying objects in a small Irish village called Irna. Many local inhabitants (claim) that they (see) a UFO flying over their heads at least several times during this month. Some even say that they (observe) little green creatures running in their fields.

V. Put the verbs in the correct form **Present Simple**, **Present Perfect** or **Past Simple**.

1. ‘..... (you/ever/place) a bet on a horse?’ ‘Sure. I
..... (do) it many times and I (be) successful
on a few occasions.’
2. We always (ask) Mr Jameson to clean the staircase but he
..... (not do) it even once since he (move) in
here in October.
3. No matter how long you (know) someone you can’t be sure
you (know) them well.
4. I can see your English (improve) much.
(you/take) any extra lesson lately?
5. Joan says she (not remember) getting rid of the files. Anyway,
they (disappear).
6. ‘What’s up? Why aren’t we continuing our journey? (we/get)
lost?’ ‘It (look) so. I’m afraid we (take)
the wrong road.’
7. We (quarrel) and she (leave) slamming
the door. I (not see) her ever since.
8. American scientists (introduce) a new method of treating
bulimia. It (take) them seven years to specify the ingredients
of the new drug but as they say it (work) wonders.
9. (the police/arrive) yet? It’s two hours since the collision
..... (occur).
10. ‘..... (you/care) for a cup of coffee?’ ‘No, thanks, Frank.
I (already/have) three today.’

11. 'So far I (observe) these strange phenomena five times.'
 'When (you/see) it last time, Mr Shears?'
12. Young people's interest in healthy living (increase) recently.
 More and more of them (take) up sport.
13. We (decide) to give Becky another chance because we (always/consider) her to be a talented accountant.
14. This is the third time he (call) me a fool. I am not going to talk to him any more unless he (apologize) to me.
15. Mark's 35 now. It's about time he got married. He (date) a few nice girls but he (not ask) any of them to marry him yet.

VI. Rewrite the sentences using the prompts so the meaning remains the same.

1. Ronald went abroad after graduating from university. (SINCE)

.....

2. The doctor is still writing the prescription. (YET)

.....?

3. When did you and Muriel start working together?

How long?

4. I last played chess seven years ago.

It

5. We are in Berlin for the first time.

..... before.

6. Susan cannot find her car keys anywhere. (LOST)

.....

7. We started co-operating with the warehouse three years ago. (FOR)

.....

8. It's about eleven months since Terry left abroad.

Terry has

9. They are talking to the fourth candidate at the moment.

So far

10. I am eating snails for the first time in my life. (NEVER)

.....

VII. Find mistakes in some of the sentences and correct them if necessary.

1. Did you ever play practical jokes as a child?

.....

2. Fiona has told me you have graduated from university some time ago.

.....

3. Have there been any people in the waiting room when you came in?

.....

4. Why are you crying? What happened?

.....

5. We don't know each other for long but I consider him to be a nice man.

.....

6. 'Did you see any interesting films this week?' 'Not yet.'

.....

7. How many times has she invited you since she has moved in the neighbourhood?

.....

8. It looks like your team have already become tired of doing the same job.

.....

9. What has she told you when you talked to her?

.....

10. I haven't had much luck of late. I didn't win a penny in the lotto this year.

.....

1.6. Present Perfect Continuous

Czas **Present Perfect Continuous** stosowany jest do opisu czynności:

(1) trwającej lub wykonywanej ciągle od określonego lub nieokreślonego momentu w przeszłości do chwili obecnej. Długość trwania lub moment rozpoczęcia wykonywania takiej czynności można opisać przy użyciu przyimków **for** oraz **since** np.

John has been waiting for some international mail for a month now.

We have been studying economics every night since the term started.

The engine has been running for twenty four hours without stopping.

I have been trying to get in touch with you for many hours.

Jeżeli moment rozpoczęcia lub długość trwania czynności opisanej w czasie **Present Perfect Continuous** nie jest określony, wówczas znaczenie takiego zdania skoncentrowane jest na ewentualnych skutkach zauważalnych w teraźniejszości lub wywierających na nią wpływ. Oznacza to także, iż czynność ta jest wykonywana w dalszym ciągu lub została niedawno zakończona np.

No wonder you don't know the topic of the lecture. You've been talking all the time.

It's been raining heavily. The road may be slippery, so drive carefully.

'I haven't heard from Carl for ages.' 'He's been staying abroad.'

We've been digging the garden but we haven't finished yet.

'Why is your hair wet?' 'I have been swimming.'

Czas **Present Perfect Continuous** jest także stosowany w pytaniach dotyczących długości trwania lub wykonywania danej czynności, zakładając, iż czynność ta jest wykonywana w dalszym ciągu lub została zakończona niedawno np.

How long has Sam been practicing for the exam?

Since when has Anna been painting the picture?

How long have you been living in the cottage?

Since when have they been running the store?

Różnica w zastosowaniu czasu **Present Perfect**, a **Present Perfect Continuous** może dotyczyć czynności dokonanej - zakończonej, a czynności wciąż wykonywanej od określonego lub nieokreślonego momentu w przeszłości. Ponadto, znaczenie czasu **Present Perfect Continuous** może zwracać większą uwagę na sam fakt trwania określonej czynności, podczas gdy czas **Present Perfect** wskazuje na jej ewentualne skutki w teraźniejszości np.

I have read the book. (I have finished reading it. I know what it's about.)

I have been reading the book. (I haven't finished reading it yet.)

Joan has been doing the washing. (She is still doing the washing.)

Joan has washed her clothes. (Joan's clothes are clean now.)

Jeżeli czynność została wykonana-powtórzona kilkakrotnie w nie zakończonym jeszcze okresie czasu, można opisać ją przy użyciu zarówno **Present Perfect Continuous**, jak i **Present Perfect** np.

We have been interviewing candidates from ten to twelve all this week. lub

We have interviewed candidates from ten to twelve all this week.

Paul has been smoking cigarettes since he arrived. lub

Paul has smoked cigarettes since he arrived.

Określając dokładnie, ile razy dana czynność została powtórzona w nie zakończonym jeszcze okresie czasu, należy użyć czas **Present Perfect**. Oznacza to, iż czynność ta może zostać wykonana ponownie w tym samym okresie czasu np.

We have interviewed fifty candidates so far.

Paul has smoked ten cigarettes since he arrived.

The children have planted over a hundred trees this morning.

Podobnie, pytając o ilość powtórzeń danej czynności w nie zakończonym jeszcze okresie czasu, należy użyć **Present Perfect** np.

How many times have you seen this play (this year/in your life)?

How many times has she phoned you (today/this afternoon)?

Czas **Present Perfect Continuous** jest stosowany do opisu zmian lub procesów zachodzących w przeciągu danego okresu, zakładając, iż zmiany te lub procesy nadal zachodzą np.

The number of the unemployed has been increasing since last year.

The sea level has been rising unstoppably for ten years now.

Young people have been getting more and more violent.

Opisując jednakże zmiany jakie zaszły do chwili obecnej w liczbach lub procentach, należy zastosować czas **Present Perfect** np.

The number of the unemployed has increased from 17% to 22% since last year.

Our company has made \$20 million loss over the last five years.

The sea level has risen by 5 centimeters so far.

Mówiąc o czynności trwającej lub wykonywanej w stosunkowo długim okresie czasu oraz podkreślając, iż obejmuje ona cały ten czas aż do chwili obecnej, należy zastosować **Present Perfect** np.

Uncle Jerry has always lived in the suburbs.

I haven't ever experienced anything like that in my life.

Mówiąc o czynności wykonywanej w stosunkowo krótkim okresie czasu, można użyć zarówno **Present Perfect**, jak i **Present Perfect Continuous** np.

We've been staying / have stayed here only for six days and so we haven't made any friends here yet.

He won't tell you much about accounting. He's been studying / has studied it only for two months.

Należy pamiętać, iż niektórych czasowników opisujących stan, opinię lub wrażenie (*state verbs*) nie należy używać w czasach **Continuous**. Dotyczy to także czasu **Present Perfect Continuous**, zaś czasowniki o których mowa to m.in.:

ache, assume, be, believe, belong to, bet, consist of, cost, depend, disagree, doubt, feel, guess, hate, have, have to, hope, know, like, look, love, matter, mean, own, possess, prefer, realise, resemble, understand, see, seem, smell, suppose, suspect, taste, think, want, weigh, wish

Oprócz szczególnych zastosowań (⇒ 1.2 str. 9) powyższe czasowniki zwykle będą występować w czasie **Present Perfect** np

I have known the Greys for many years.

Rob has always depended on his parents.

We have belonged to the society since 1990.

The police have suspected him of faking money for some time.

EXERCISE BANK

I. Choose the correct answer. Check if both are possible.

1. The workers repairing the road yet.
a) haven't finished b) haven't been finishing
2. You look exhausted. ?
a) Have you been running b) Have you run?
3. I've no idea how long Mark and Julia together.
a) have lived b) have been living
4. Someone my dictionary. I put it here yesterday but it's not here any more.
a) has been stealing b) has stolen
5. We the men exchange some mysterious packages at least three times this week.
a) have been noticing b) have noticed
6. Since when that luxurious villa overlooking the sea?
a) has Mr Woods owned b) has Mr Woods been owning

7. So far, Janet me only ten pounds.
 a) has been paying b) has paid
8. Finally, the representatives They are being driven to the conference centre now.
 a) have been arriving b) have arrived
9. The furious protesters the highway since Monday last week.
 a) have been blocking b) have blocked
10. Things worse since the new government took over.
 a) have gotten b) have been getting

II. Put the verbs in the correct form **Present Perfect or **Present Perfect Continuous**.**

1. make
 - a. (you) your bed yet? If not, hurry up.
 - b. The conference began at six. The chairman his speech since that time.
2. wash
 - a. Look at my hands. They are destroyed. I dishes in cold water.
 - b. Wait for me in the hall. I (not) myself yet.
3. try
 - a. The doctors to resuscitate the wounded man since he was brought to hospital.
 - b. We to make him change his behaviour a thousand times but he's still the same.
4. play
 - a. Just look at you, Martin. Your clothes are dirty all over. (play) in mud?
 - b. I'm sick of that song. The disc jockey it at least ten times tonight.
5. attend
 - a. I (not) any of the professors' lectures. Now I wish I had.
 - b. Only this week, our children the extra classes.
6. have
 - a. I (never) a chance to speak with Mr Jackson personally.
 - b. I can see you a good time since the very moment you arrived.
7. lose
 - a. Since the recession began, our company more and more money.
 - b. My hand's numb. I think I my sense of touch.
8. wear
 - a. I gave this woollen scarf to Helen for Christmas six years ago and she it every winter since that time.

- b. 'I've got sore feet.' 'It looks like the boots you
are too tight.'
- 9. beat
 - a. 'There's plenty of dust in your hair.' 'I know. I
the carpets.'
 - b. The world record was set by an American runner in 1987. Nobody
..... it as yet.
- 10. book
 - a. Don't worry. I tickets for us.
 - b. People tickets for that great athletic event all
this week. We still have about a thousand tickets to go.

III. Put the verbs in the correct form Present Perfect or Present Perfect Continuous.

1. '..... (you/ever/climb) a mountain?' 'Sure. I
(do) it dozens of times.'
2. 'Why are you crying?' 'I'm not crying. I (chop) onions.'
3. There (never/be) so great interest in our computers as this
year. Our PCs (sell) really well since the beginning of this
year.
4. Jack (just/tell) me your wife (give) a birth
to a girl. Congratulations!
5. Believe me. I (do) my best to repair your watch but I
..... (fail). I'm sorry.
6. 'How many of these unique chairs (you/collect) up to now?'
'I bought one last month from an antique dealer in Milan. Since then, I
..... (have) nine of them.'
7. Since the danger of a chemical attack was announced, people all over the country
..... (buy) gas masks and other protective clothes.
8. 'Where's Alex? I (not see) him for a moment.'
'He (take) a nap in the garden.'
9. People (always/destroy) the planet but they
..... (never/act) so thoughtlessly as they do now.
10. Over the last ten months, the company (lay) off more than
half of their staff. It looks like they (make) only losses.
11. 'Help yourself to some more of the cake.' 'Thanks. I
(already/eat) enough. In fact, I (try) to lose weight.'
12. You (keep) me waiting for too long. Tell me now, please.
..... (you/make) up your mind yet?
13. I (remove) the faulty part, sir. Your car can hear now the way
the engine is working (improve).

14. Another amateur climber (get) lost in the mountains. It's the second time it (happen) this month.
15. You cannot drive the car, Bruce. You (drink) and you (not sober) up yet.

IV. Put the verbs in the correct form **Present Perfect** or **Present Perfect Continuous**.

Reporter: Sir, you (work) for B&B Company for over ten years and you (go) through all the company levels to finally become its head. So, why (you/decide) to quit lately?

Mr Rund: I (take) this decision because I (become) more and more tired of such hard work for the last couple of months. It's not that I (stop) enjoying the job I do but perhaps the time (come) for me to make room for someone younger.

Reporter: Oh, I see. (you/select) your successor yet?

Mr Rund: No names yet. I (consider) a number of candidates for some time but none of them (give) any clear signal of a possible promotion yet.

Reporter: How about the company? What state are you leaving it in?

Mr Rund: We (pay) all our debts recently and we (negotiate) new contracts. The talks still continue and bode well for us.

1.7. Past Perfect

Czas **Past Perfect** nosi miano czasu ‘zaprzeszłego’, ponieważ opisuje czynność wykonaną wcześniej od innej czynności, stanowiącej punkt odniesienia w czasie przeszłym. Czas ten nie jest stosowany w zdaniu opisującym pojedynczą czynność wykonaną w przeszłości. Do tego celu służy czas **Past Simple**. Czas **Past Perfect** występuje w szerszym kontekście, w którym następuje cofnięcie perspektywy czasowej. Opisując fakt wykonania czynności ‘zaprzeszłej’, można posłużyć się takimi określeniami czasu jak:

after, as soon as, before, by the time, when

As soon as I had left hospital, I returned to work.

After we had renovated the house, we decided to sell it.

When Mary opened the door, the postman had gone away.

By the time I reached the nearest town, I had run out of petrol.

Innymi przysłówkami stosowanymi z czasem **Past Perfect** są **already** i **just** np.

I had just gone to bed when the door bell rang.

When you arrived, the party had already started.

Czynność opisana w czasie **Past Perfect** została wykonana – zakończona wcześniej, niż czynność opisana w czasie **Past Simple**. Jeżeli jednak mowa jest o sekwencji czynności, które następowaly kolejno, wówczas wszystkie takie czynności będą opisane w czasie **Past Simple** np.

The alarm clock went off at eight. John woke up and got out of bed. He looked out of the window and saw it was quite light outside. Suddenly, he heard a strange noise coming from his bathroom. When he came in there he almost got a shock. The bath was almost full of water.

Powyzszy opis wydarzeń można poszerzyć, dodając czynności ‘zaprzeszłe’ np.

The alarm clock went off at eight. John had spent the whole previous night working, so he didn't feel relaxed at all. He got out of bed and looked out of the window. He saw that the paper boy had left a newspaper on his lawn. Suddenly, he heard a strange noise coming from his bathroom. When he came in there he almost got a shock. He had forgotten to turn off the tap and so the bath was full of water. He realized that water had been dripping into the bath the whole night.

Wskazując na fakt, iż określony stan lub wydarzenie jest spowodowane lub wynika z wcześniejszego wydarzenia, zwykle stosuje się czas **Past Simple** np.

When I told her the news, her mood changed

After Mr Howard resigned, we found it hard to find a replacement for him.

The company collapsed when their investments didn't bring the required result.

1.8. Past Perfect Continuous

Czas **Past Perfect Continuous** stosowany jest do opisu czynności ‘zaprzeszej’, która trwała lub była wykonywana ciągle od określonego momentu lub przez określoną długość czasu do momentu stanowiącego punkt odniesienia w przeszłości. Oznacza to, iż czynność ta mogła być wykonywana nadal lub została zakończona przed momentem odniesienia. W tym znaczeniu czas **Past Perfect Continuous** może wystąpić z przyimkami **for** oraz **since** np.

*Rob had been driving for twelve hours when the accident occurred.
Joan looked much better, then. She had been staying in hospital for three weeks.
The time came to start the campaign. Our forces had been preparing it for months.
In 1938, we were told to move out of the cottage. We had been living in it since 1931.*

Jeżeli moment rozpoczęcia lub długość trwania czynności opisanej w czasie **Past Perfect Continuous** nie jest określona, wówczas znaczenie takiego zdania skoncentrowane jest na ewentualnych skutkach takiej czynności zauważalnych w danym momencie w przeszłości. Oznacza to także, iż czynność ta była wykonywana w dalszym ciągu lub została zakończona krótko przed momentem odniesienia np.

*I could hardly breathe. I had been running.
The streets were full of water. It had been raining hard.
Why did you throw my newspaper away? I'd been reading it.
Suddenly, I felt tired. I had been studying for the exam the whole day.*

Czas **Past Perfect Continuous** nie występuje w pojedynczym zdaniu opisującym czynność trwającą wykonywaną w przeszłości. Występuje on w szerszym kontekście, w którym następuje cofnięcie perspektywy czasowej np.

Susan came late. We had already been discussing the matter for some time and so she didn't quite know where we were at that time. She told us she had been driving through the city center and had got stuck in a traffic jam.

Opisując pojedynczą czynność dokonaną - zakończoną oraz mówiąc o tym, ile razy określona czynność została wykonana - powtórzona w danym okresie czasu, należy zastosować czas **Past Perfect** np.

*Joan had told me everything. I knew what had happened.
Before my visit in the country, I had had several inoculations
Some of us had fallen asleep even before the performance started.
Ralph had read the novel a few times so he knew what it was about.
By the time you finished your lunch, I had read three long articles in the newspaper.*

Niekiedy różnica w zastosowaniu czasu **Past Perfect Continuous**, a **Past Perfect** dotyczy sposobu, w jaki interpretowana jest opisana czynność. Czas **Past Perfect Continuous** kładzie większy nacisk na sam fakt wykonania - trwania czynności, podczas gdy czas **Past Perfect** może skupiać większą uwagę na ewentualnym rezultacie wykonanej czynności np.

We had been repairing the roof and so we felt tired.

We had repaired the roof and it stopped leaking.

Różnica w zastosowaniu czasu **Past Continuous**, a **Past Perfect Continuous** jest zasadnicza. **Past Continuous** opisuje czynność, która trwała lub była w dalszym ciągu wykonywana w danym momencie odniesienia, zaś **Past Perfect Continuous**, jeżeli wystąpi bez określeń czasowych, będzie odwoływał się do czynności, która trwała przez jakiś czas, lecz została zakończona na krótko przed momentem odniesienia np.

When we came home, our children were (still) watching TV.

When we came home, our children had been watching TV. (They forgot to turn it off.)

Podobnie jak w przypadku innych czasów z grupy **Continuous**, czasowniki opisujące stan, opinię lub wrażenie (*state verbs*) nie są stosowane w czasie **Past Perfect Continuous** - za wyjątkiem szczególnych znaczeń (⇒ 1.2 str. 9). Do grupy tej należą czasowniki:

ache, assume, be, believe, belong to, bet, consist of, cost, depend, disagree, doubt, feel, guess, hate, have, have to, hope, know, like, look, love, matter, mean, own, possess, prefer, realise, resemble, understand, see, seem, smell, suppose, suspect, taste, think, want, weigh, wish

I had falsely assumed the man was a spy but he turned out to be our ally.

Before, the construction plan had consisted of many more points.

We had realized it was all lies. We had to dismiss the witness.

They had owned the flat for twelve years before selling it.

EXERCISE BANK

I. Choose the correct answer or answers.

1. How long each other before you decided to get married?
a) did you and Mark know b) had you and Mark been knowing
c) had you and Mark known d) were you and Mark knowing
2. I wasn't ready when Tom came to pick me up. I my dress.
a) was ironing my dress b) had ironed
c) had been ironing d) ironed
3. When you painting the wall, what did you do next?
a) had been finishing b) finished
c) were finishing d) had finished

4. While we penalties, our coach was giving an interview.
a) had practised b) were practising
c) practised d) had been practising
5. How many private lessons by the time you decided to sit the FCE exam?
a) had you taken b) had you been taking
c) did you take d) were you taking
6. Ed economics for six months when he realized it wasn't his cup of tea.
a) was studying b) had been studying
c) studied d) had studied
7. By the time the special squad arrived, the kidnappers five hostages free.
a) had set b) set
c) had been setting d) were setting
8. I was worried. It was nine p.m. and my kids home yet.
a) were not returning b) had not been returning
c) had not returned d) did not return
9. By the frown on Janet's face, I could see something wrong to her.
a) had been happening b) happened
c) was happening d) had happened
10. Andy the substances. He needed them for some experiment.
a) ordered b) had been ordering
c) had ordered d) was ordering

II. Put the verbs in the correct tense **Past Simple, Past Continuous, Past Perfect or Past Perfect Continuous.**

1. hold a. We the conference for two hours when the lights went off.
b. The captain the wounded soldier in his hands when the poor boy passed away.
c. The rainy weather for three weeks. We could do nothing. We just stayed in our tents and played cards.
d. How many of the brainstorming sessions (you) before you worked out this innovating approach?
2. pass a. When I looked at the sky, heavy clouds slowly.

- b. (they) the border by the time their car broke down?
- c. The time we were given since noon and we hadn't even collected a third part of the ransom.
- d. I saw Brian in the store last night. He just by without even saying hello to me.
3. recover
- a. We visited Jim in hospital. He there since the accident.
- b. The police the stolen car after a long pursuit.
- c. I was immensely happy because I the blueprints I had lost the day before.
- d. Just as I the golden artefacts from the wreck I ran out of oxygen. I had to surface for a new bottle and then dive again.
4. load
- a. The soldier couldn't fire a shot. He simply (not) his gun.
- b. The crane put the boxes down and we them into the vans.
- c. While the software, I went to the cafeteria and got myself a cup of coffee
- d. We needed a rest. We were dog tired. We the trucks up with gravel the whole morning.
5. plant
- a. By midday, we over two hundred of the oak trees.
- b. 'Why were your hands so dirty?' 'I trees.'
- c. The man who a bomb in the embassy the previous month was caught by the police yesterday.
- d. I roses in the garden when I was stung by a bee.

III. Put the verbs in the correct tense **Past Simple, Past Continuous, Past Perfect or Past Perfect Continuous.**

1. Professor Attenborough, who (die) last year, (co-ordinate) the research for three years.
2. Yesterday, the police finally (catch) the arsonist who (set) fire at least five times.
3. I (not realize) you (wait) for me all the time. How long (you/sit) in the hall before my arrival?

4. We (enjoy) the party until David (get) too much alcohol and (begin) making a fool of himself.
5. I (drive) along the road for about two hours when it suddenly (dawn) on me that I (not go) in the right direction.
6. The earth (shake) at least ten times before the major earthquake (occur).
7. All the children (laugh) while the comedians (perform) their funny tricks. They (not see) anything like that before.
8. Finally, I (succeed) in passing the exam. I (have) three attempts.
9. It (be) Jack who (draw) our attention to the fact. Before, we (not give) it any serious consideration.
10. By the time the bank (go) bankrupt, many of its clients (withdraw) their savings.
11. When I (touch) the engine, it (be) still hot. Undoubtedly, somebody (drive) my car without my permission.
12. How many of these pills (you/swallow) before you (feel) dizzy and (start) vomiting?
13. Although he denied being involved in the bribery affair, the minister (hand) in his resignation when it (break out).
14. After the play (end), the audience (stand up and (give) the actors a standing ovation that (last) for about fifteen minutes.
15. I (just/show) my guests round the house when I (smell) this odour. Then, I (remember) I (iron) before their arrival and (forget) to switch the iron off.

IV. Put the verbs in the correct tense **Past Simple, Past Continuous, Past Perfect or Past Perfect Continuous.**

When I (open) my eyes, I (lie) on the floor and I (see) some strange people who (scream) into my face. But I (not understand) them as they (speak) some foreign language.

I was pretty sure I (not meet) them before and when I (look) around, I (get) the idea I was on board of a plane. Slowly, all my senses (come) back and I (begin) to understand what (go) on. Those screaming people were hijackers and they (hit) me on the head so hard that I (lose) my consciousness. At that time, I really (have) no idea how long I (lie) there unconscious before I (came) round but what I (know) for sure was that I was the pilot of this plane. When I (realize) it wasn't me who (fly) it, I (get) into panic. I (want) to do something but I (can not) move. The hijackers (tie) up my hands and my legs. I (never/feel) so powerless as at that single moment and I (feel) even worse when I (understand) that the worst was still to come.

We (walk) through the jungle until we (find) a place we (can) feel safe in. Since we (lose) our orientation in the deep forest, some savage natives and wild animals (attack) us at least ten times. Each time, we either (have) to fight hard for our survival or run as quickly as possible. Unfortunately, by the time we (reach) our haven, two members of our expedition (lose) their lives. Tim Mitchell, who (promise) his young wife to return home safe and sound, (receive) a deadly blow on the head while he (pick) some seeds for a meal that he (hope) to cook. Jonathan Edwards, who (plan) this expedition, (slip) and (fall) ten metres down a rocky gorge while we (run) away. When we (come) down to rescue him, he (still/breathe). We (put) him on a provisional stretcher made of bamboo sticks and rags and (carry) him for about seven miles hoping to find some help until he (breathe) his last. Then, we (bury) him and (continue) our grim and hazardous journey. There (be) only five of us left when we (find) ourselves in an Indian village hundreds of miles away from the shore where we (leave) our boat.

1.9. Future Simple

Czas **Future Simple** jest stosowany do opisu czynności, jaka według opinii rozmówcy ma się wydarzyć w określonej lub nieokreślonej przyszłości. Wyrażenie takie oparte jest zwykle jedynie na domniemaniu lub przewidywaniu. Stąd, zdanie wyrażone w **Future Simple** często poprzedzone jest czasownikiem opisującym subiektywną opinię mówiącego np.

I think John will take Mr Bridges' place.

I guess you will have to write the exam again.

Innymi czasownikami często stosowanymi z czasem **Future Simple** są:

assume, believe, doubt, expect, hope, imagine, reckon, seem, suppose, suspect

I suppose they will not arrive on time.

We suppose the road will be closed for longer.

I imagine you will tell Peter about what has happened.

It seems to me that the manager will not agree to my proposal.

Żadne z powyższych zdań nie wyraża pewności, a jedynie przypuszczenie, że dana czynność może zostać wykonana. Jedynie w języku formalnym stosowanym w zawiadomieniach lub oficjalnych komunikatach czynności lub wydarzenia zaplanowane w określonej przyszłości są wyrażane przy użyciu czasu **Future Simple** np.

The conference will start at seven.

The team will meet before their departure.

The ceremony will take place in the Royal Palace.

Czas **Future Simple** stosowany jest w przypadku decyzji podjętej w tej samej chwili, gdy jest o niej mowa np.

'I've left my wallet at home.' 'Don't worry. I will lend you some money.'

'Someone's knocking at the door.' 'I'll open it.'

The shoes are too big. I will take them back.

Czas **Future Simple** występuje w zdaniach w trybie warunkowym I (\Leftrightarrow 4.2. str. 122) oraz w zdaniach czasowych (\Leftrightarrow 13 str. 224) np.

If they pull the house down, the people will have nowhere to live.

As soon as I get back home, I will contact my doctor.

Future Simple może także wyrażać przypuszczenie odnoszące się do chwili obecnej np.

'Who's that blonde woman sitting beside Jim? 'That will be his wife.'
'I can't find my car keys.' 'The children will have them.'

Poniższe przykłady prezentują inne sposoby wyrażenia podobnych przypuszczeń.

It is possible that the woman is Jim's wife. lub *Supposedly, she is Jim's wife.*
It's likely that the children have your car keys. lub *The children may have them.*

1.10. Be going to

Konstrukcja **be going to** nie stanowi odrębnej formy czasowej. Jest ona stosowana dla wyrażenia zamiaru lub czynności zaplanowanej w czasie przyszłym. Konstrukcja ta wskazuje na fakt, iż zostały podjęte pewne kroki lub czynności zmierzające do realizacji określonego zamierzenia np.

We've hired an interior designer. We're going to have our flat redecorated.
Why have you brought the paint? Are you going to paint the fence?
I don't feel good here. I'm going to move out soon.
The people are going to adopt little Andrew.

Konstrukcja **be going to** jest także stosowana w celu wyrażenia czynności, która jak wiemy lub przewidujemy nastąpi w przyszłości, co może wynikać z faktów wskazujących na taką ewentualność. Zwykle zaistnienie takiej czynności jest uzależnione od czynników zewnętrznych, na które nie mamy wpływu np.

It's late and my bus hasn't come yet. I'm going to miss my lesson.
Can you see those heavy clouds? It's going to rain.
I've got a high temperature. I'm going to be ill.
Watch out! The tree's going to fall.

Niekiedy, w przypadku opisu czynności w czasie przyszłym różnica w zastosowaniu konstrukcji **be going to**, a czasu **Future Simple** jest na tyle niewielka, że możliwe jest zastosowanie obydwu tych form bez większej zmiany znaczenia. Dotyczy to zwykle punktu widzenia, jakim kieruje się osoba wypowiadająca określone zdanie np.

I will help Tom rake the leaves in the afternoon.
I'm going to help Tom rake the leaves in the afternoon.

Czasownik **go** dość rzadko występuje z konstrukcją **be going to**. Aby wyrazić zamiar przy użyciu tego czasownika, zwykle stosuje czas **Present Continuous** np.

*Jules says he's going to Geneva soon.
This afternoon, we're going shopping downtown.*

1.11. Present Continuous - określanie przyszłości

Czas **Present Continuous** może opisywać czynności odnoszące się do czasu przyszłego. Znaczenie jakie wyraża dotyczy czynności zaplanowanej, szczególnie gdy podjęte zostały określone kroki lub czynności zmierzające do realizacji danego zamierzenia. W tym zastosowaniu znaczenie wyrażane przez czas **Present Continuous** nie odbiega od znaczenia, jakie wyraża konstrukcja **be going to**. Dlatego, w wielu sytuacjach można stosować je zamiennie. Zwykle jednakże w zdaniu opisującym zamiar w czasie **Present Continuous** wystąpi także dokładne określenie czasu, w którym dane zamierzenie lub plan mają być zrealizowane np.

*George is leaving tonight and Mike's driving him to the airport.
I've borrowed a few books and I'm going to read them.
While in Rome, we're going to do some sightseeing.
Next Saturday, we're organizing a garden party.*

Odwołując się do definitywnych zamierzeń planowanych w określonym terminie w przyszłości, zwykle preferowaną formą będzie czas **Present Continuous** np.

*At ten a.m., we're having guests from Japan.
Janet is helping us with the removal tonight.
At the weekend, I am leaving for Palm Springs.
On Friday 12th, Sheila is taking part in a photo session.*

Mówiąc o mniej sprecyzowanych lub spontanicznych zamierzeniach, których dokładny termin realizacji nie został określony, preferowaną formą będzie **be going to** np.

*I'm dog tired. I'm going to have a rest.
I'll wait until Jack comes back. I'm going to talk to him.
We don't like the colour of the walls. We're going to repaint them.
The situation has changed completely. I don't know what I am going to do now.*

Niekiedy czas **Present Continuous** jest stosowany w przypadku decyzji odnoszącej się do przyszłości, a podjętej w tej samej chwili, gdy jest o niej mowa. Oznacza to, że jest to definitywne postanowienie, które raczej nie ulegnie zmianie np.

'I can lower the price by one thousand.' 'We have a deal then. I am buying the car.'
'Have you heard Ron's launching a party on Saturday?' 'That's great. I'm coming.'

Przewidując czynności oraz okoliczności, które mają się wydarzyć, a na które nie mamy bezpośredniego wpływu lub których nie możemy zaplanować, nie należy stosować czasu **Present Continuous**. W sytuacji takiej należy użyć formę **be going to** lub czas **Future Simple** np.

The test was very difficult. I think I am going to / will fail it.
Now, things look bad, but the situation is going to / will change soon.
I'm sorry but the disease is incurable. I'm afraid your cat is going to / will die.

Czasu **Present Continuous** nie należy także stosować, gdy mowa jest o czynnościach regularnych lub długoterminowych, jakie mają, według opinii rozmówcy, zaistnieć w przyszłości np.

I don't think people are going to / will look different in a thousand years' time.
In decades to come, people are going to / will have more free time.
Our factories are going to / will produce more in the future.

Czasownik **be** nie występuje w czasie **Present Continuous** opisującym sytuację odnoszącą się do przyszłości. W zamian występuje on z formą **be going to** np.

In the evening, we're going to be at Adam's party.
Next year, Oslo is going to be the host of the Winter Olympic Games.

Ta sama zasada dotyczy innych czasowników opisującymi stan, opinię lub wrażenie - (*state verbs*). Zwykle występują one w czasie **Future Simple**. Do grupy tej należą m.in.:

ache, assume, be, believe, belong to, bet, consist of, cost, depend, disagree, doubt, feel, guess, hate, have, have to, hope, know, like, look, love, matter, mean, own, possess, prefer, realise, resemble, understand, see, seem, smell, suppose, suspect, taste, think, want, weigh, wish

Don't put too much salt in the soup. It will taste salty.
Susan will not like the idea, for sure. She hates being irrational.
It will not matter to Jane what she gets for her birthday. She's not fussy.

1.12. Present Simple - określanie przyszłości

Czas **Present Simple** może być stosowany do opisu czynności odnoszącej się do przyszłości. Zazwyczaj jest to czynność stanowiąca część oficjalnego planu, protokołu lub rozkładu jazdy np.

At four, President has lunch with the prime minister.

After the meeting, the Chancellor goes to Edinburgh.

The ceremony takes place in the Royal Palace.

The next London-Chelsea train leaves at six.

W powyższych zdaniach można także zastosować czas **Future Simple**, choć wówczas zdanie takie może utracić swój oficjalny wydźwięk oraz znaczenie definitywności ustalonych zamierzeń.

Szczególnym sposobem zastosowania czasu **Present Simple** do opisu czynności przyszłej są zdania czasowe rozpoczynające się od spójników czasowych (\Rightarrow 13 str. 224) np.

When Tom arrives, he will find out the truth.

As soon as the game ends, we will ask the coach for an interview.

Innym szczególnym przypadkiem są zdania ze spójnikiem **that** (*that clauses*) oraz z zaimkami '**-wh**' w funkcji spójników. Jeżeli zarówno zdanie podrzędne jak i zdanie nadrzędne odnosi się do przyszłości, wówczas w zdaniu z **that** lub spójnikiem '**-wh**' stosuje się czas **Present Simple**, nie zaś **Future Simple** np.

Will you check that they wrap the packages correctly, please? (nie ...will wrap)

I will make sure that your letters are delivered. (nie ...will be delivered)

Josh will find out when the plane lands. (nie ... will land)

Nobody will listen to what he says. (nie ...will say)

EXERCISE BANK

I. Choose the correct answer or answers.

1. How was it at the interview? Do you think you the job?
a) get b) will get c) are getting d) are going to get
2. At this time next Saturday, we a very important match.
a) are going to play b) are playing c) play d) will play

3. According to the agenda, the ministers at eleven a.m.
a) meet b) will meet c) are going to meet d) are meeting
4. Who your duties after you leave the company?
a) is taking b) will take c) is going to take d) takes
5. This summer, we to Majorca. We've made this decision together.
a) are going to go b) will go c) go d) are going
6. I hope you anything after work. I'd like to invite you for lunch.
a) don't do b) will not do c) are not doing d) are not going to do
7. We can't be late. The ferry at seven sharp.
a) is going to leave b) will leave c) is leaving d) leaves
8. 'Why are you carrying the ladder?' 'I the roof.'
a) repair b) am going to repair c) will repair d) am repairing
9. I doubt whether he to beat the world record.
a) is managing b) will manage c) is going to manage d) manages
10. 'Can I talk to Mr Palmer?' 'Hang on a second. I to find him.'
a) will try b) am going to try c) try d) am trying

II. Put the verbs in the correct form **Future Simple, be going to, Present Continuous or Present Simple.**

1. come a. The investigators haven't found any evidence yet, but soon the whole truth about the bribery affair out.
b. I'd like you to stay at home this afternoon. Casey and her husband for lunch.
c. Will you make sure that all the team members to attend the session tomorrow?
2. launch a. Everything's been arranged. Tom a stag party tomorrow.
b. We have the money to build another spy satellite and we it whether our enemies like it or not.
c. The astronauts are already inside the rocket. We it at 7.04 a.m.
3. have a. Sorry, I am awfully busy at the moment but I'm sure I more time for you after work.
b. The police know now it was Mark who broke into the school lab. The boy a lot of trouble.

- c. I have an appointment with my dentist at five. I
my sore tooth pulled out.
4. lose
- a. The score is four nil and there're only two minutes to go. Our team lose the game.
 - b. When you your temper, take a deep breath and count to ten.
 - c. You'd better not give the money to the kid. He it for sure.
5. take
- a. What a lovely necklace. And it doesn't cost much.
I it. You can wrap it.
 - b. I've been working for seven hours. I a rest now.
 - c. If you criticize them like that, half of the people offence with you.

III. Put the verbs in the correct form Future Simple, be going to, Present Continuous or Present Simple.

1. ‘Do you have any plans for your future, Steve?’
‘Of course I have. I (become) a successful lawyer and when I (earn) enough, I (buy) a house with a big garden at the seaside.’
2. ‘When (you/tell) us who (take) your place when you (retire)?’
‘I (make) a decision soon. Be patient.’
3. ‘..... (you/do) anything tonight? Harry and I (meet) at the Gordon's Pub at nine. You can join us if you wish.’
‘Great. I (be) there.’
4. ‘What (you/do) with the silver pen you've bought?’
‘I (give) it to Lisa for her eighteenth birthday.’
5. ‘We have borrowed a video player from Adam . We (watch) some films.’
‘I (lend) you one of my own. It's called *The Gladiator*. It's really good.’
6. ‘Who (fight) in tonight's boxing match?’
‘Probably, we (see) a boxing champion from America.’
7. ‘I do know the girl's phone number but I (not tell) you.’
‘Tell me or I (never/let) you copy my homework again.’

8. ‘ (you/move) out to Greece as you have planned?’
‘Yeah. Jack’s got that job he applied for and we (leave) the country for a couple of years soon.’
9. ‘What (happen) if the alarm goes off?’
‘The security officers (arrive) within minutes and (stop) anyone they find inside the building.’
10. ‘Why are you standing in the queue? (you/buy) anything?’
‘Maybe. I don’t know what yet, but if I see something interesting, I (buy) it.’

IV. Put the verbs in the correct form Future Simple, be going to, Present Continuous or Present Simple.

1. Next Saturday, we (have) a school reunion. I hope I (meet) some of my old friends.
2. Some of us must stay at the camp and look after the younger scouts. George, you (stay) and (take) care of everything.
3. Tonight, we (go) to a casino but I (not bet) all my money.
4. How long (you/be), Tom? I (wait) for you here but only until five o’clock.
5. The young soldier who deserted last month (stand) trial in court-martial.
6. Unless you agree to my latest proposal, I (back) out of the negotiations.
7. Who is next according to the agenda? Who (make) a speech after the chairman?
8. You (get) the part, I promise. But before we start shooting the film, I (give) you some instruction in acting.
9. Your shoes look terribly worn out. They (fall) apart soon.
10. I love Julianne very much and I (ask) her to marry me. But I don’t know what I (do) if she says no.
11. I can see you’ve taken your crossbow. (you/use) it for underwater fish hunting?
12. Give these sweets away to the children. They (be) happy.
13. According to the agenda, after the lunch, the Pope (visit) the newly-built cathedral and (say) prayers for the war victims.
14. NOTICE: ‘The exam session (start) on Monday 4th and (last) till Friday 22nd.

15. I can't meet you at ten. I (play) tennis with Marco and we probably (not finish) until noon.
16. There are hopes that the new model of the plane (bring) huge profits to the designers and the producers.
17. Could you please put the address down, otherwise I (not remember) it.
18. 'I've forgotten to e-mail this message to Peter.' 'Don't worry. You (do) it tomorrow.'
19. You're the perfect candidate, Mr Blank. I (give) you the job. You (start) from tomorrow.
20. The temperature is above zero. The snowman you have built (melt) down.

V. Choose the appropriate continuation for each sentence.

1. Carl has taken up judo recently.
 - a. He's going to become a judo champion.
 - b. He becomes a judo champion.
 - c. He is becoming a judo champion.
2. Everything's been carefully planned.
 - a. Mr Hicks will open the ceremony at 8.
 - b. Mr Hicks is going to open the ceremony at 8.
 - c. Mr Hicks opens the ceremony at 8.
3. I don't have the exam results yet.
 - a. I'm going to know them soon.
 - b. I'm knowing them soon.
 - c. I will know them soon.
4. Don't worry I will check that
 - a. everything goes smoothly.
 - b. everything will go smoothly.
 - c. everything is going to go smoothly.
5. I've bought this pullover for Simon.
 - a. He will like it, for sure.
 - b. He's going to like it, for sure.
 - c. He is liking it, for sure.

1.13. Future Continuous

Czas **Future Continuous** stosowany jest do opisu czynności, która będzie wykonywana w danym momencie lub przez dany okres czasu w przyszłości. Oznacza to, iż wykonywanie takiej czynności zostanie rozpoczęte wcześniej od momentu odniesienia w przyszłości lub, że czynność ta będzie wykonywana przez całą długość określonego czasu. Moment lub czas trwania takiej czynności powinien być zdefiniowany np.

Tomorrow at six, we will be driving to Toronto.

I won't be attending the course for the next two weeks.

Next Saturday, I will be helping my neighbours with removal.

The rock band will be performing live from nine p.m. till midnight.

During the conference, we will be talking about environmental issues.

Czas **Future Continuous** może także opisywać czynność zaplanowaną w przyszłości. W tym znaczeniu może on być stosowany zamiennie z **Present Continuous** np.

We are visiting the Louvre tomorrow. lub We will be visiting the Louvre tomorrow.

Frank is going to the party with us. lub Frank will be going to the party with us.

Mówiąc jednakże o wydarzeniu nieoczekiwany lub przekazując wiadomość zaskakującą częściej stosowaną formą jest **Present Continuous** np.

Jack's told me you are moving out. Why didn't you tell me that?

Have you heard they are closing the biology department?

Czas **Future Continuous** może opisywać czynność, która będzie wykonana w wyniku ustalonej wcześniej rutyny np.

I will be meeting Janet in the office. (I always meet her in the office.)

We will be driving along the countryside as usual.

Tom will be going to the supermarket in the morning.

Czas **Future Continuous** stosowany jest w szczególnie uprzejmych zapytaniach o plany lub zamierzenia innych osób szczególnie, gdy chodzi o nieoczekiwana lub większą przysługę np.

Will you be going to the newsagent's? I'd like you to buy me a magazine.

Will you be seeing Mark today? Could you remind him to bring my books back?

1.14. Future Perfect

Czas **Future Perfect** stosowany jest do opisu czynności, która będzie wykonana - zakończona przed określonym momentem w przyszłości. Moment ten powinien być zdefiniowany. W tym celu często stosuje się przyimki: **before** oraz **by (the time)**. Moment odniesienia w przyszłości często określony jest przy pomocy innej czynności opisanej zdaniem czasowym (⇒ 13 str. 224) np.

By noon, we will have completed decorating the dance room.

By the time you visit us again, our children will have grown up a lot.

Tom and Sarah will have spent a lot of time together before they get married.

Czas **Future Perfect** może określać, ile razy dana czynność zostanie wykonana - powtórzona do danego momentu w przyszłości np.

Ronald will have had three operations by the end of this year.

Before it returns to Earth, the probe will have orbited Mars four times.

W powyższych zdaniach zamiast czasu **Future Perfect** można także zastosować czasowniki modalne w formie dokonanej. Znaczenie jakie wyrażają w tym przypadku odnosi się do przyszłości np.

Before we reach the peak of the mountain, it may have started raining.

The spy could have destroyed all evidence by the time he is captured.

By next term, Harry should have retaken all his exams.

1.15. Future Perfect Continuous

Czas **Future Perfect Continuous** opisuje jak długi okres czasu upłynie w określonym momencie w przyszłości, od kiedy dana czynność jest wykonywana. Oznacza to, iż w momencie odniesienia opisywana czynność będzie nadal wykonywana. Moment odniesienia w przyszłości musi być zdefiniowany i podobnie jak w czasie **Future Perfect** jest on najczęściej opisany przy użyciu przyimków **by (the time)** lub **before**. Długość trwania lub wykonywania takiej czynności opisana jest zwykle przy użyciu przyimka **for** np.

By the end of July, Dave will have been working for us for six months.

By one o'clock, I will have been waiting for my dinner for half an hour.

Before the clock strikes eleven, my baby will have been sleeping for four hours.

Podobnie rzecz się ma z pytaniem dotyczącym długości wykonywania określonej czynności do danego momentu odniesienia w czasie przyszłym np.

How long will Sam have been staying abroad by December?

How long will you have been living in the flat by the end of this year?

How long will the terrorists have been occupying the building by midnight?

Powysze czynności można także opisać przy użyciu czasu **Future Perfect**, jednakże czas **Future Perfect Continuous** w bardziej zdecydowany sposób podkreśla ciągłość wykonywanej czynności.

Mówiąc o tym, ile razy dana czynność zostanie wykonana - powtórzona do momentu odniesienia w przeszłości, nie należy stosować czasu **Future Perfect Continuous**, lecz **Future Perfect** np.

By the end of this year, Billy will have taken part in seven marathons.

The man says that before the time runs out, he will have eaten fifteen hamburgers.

We will have produced a thousand more cars before the factory is closed for good.

W czasie **Future Perfect Continuous** nie stosuje się czasowników z grupy *state verbs*. Za wyjątkiem szczególnych znaczeń (\Rightarrow 1.2. str. 9), można je stosować tylko w czasie **Future Perfect**. Do grupy tej należą m.in.:

ache, assume, be, believe, belong to, bet, consist of, cost, depend, disagree, doubt, feel, guess, hate, have, have to, hope, know, like, look, love, matter, mean, own, possess, prefer, realise, resemble, understand, see, seem, smell, suppose, suspect, taste, think, want, weigh, wish

On October 20th, I will have owned the villa for three years.

How long will Samantha have had the cat by the end of this month?

We will have known each other for seven months by the end of this year

On his next birthday, Jules will have depended on his parents for twenty two years.

EXERCISE BANK

I. Choose the correct answer or answers.

1. I cannot see you at five. I my doctor at the time.
a) will have been seeing b) am seeing
c) will see d) will be seeing

2. Before he turns eighteen, Jack his place of stay at least three times.
- a) will change b) will have changed
c) is going to change d) will have been changing
3. I don't know if I to solve the puzzle. It seems to be really difficult.
- a) will manage b) am managing
c) will have managed d) am going to manage
4. How long that scar on your cheek before the surgeons remove it?
- a) will you be having b) will you have
c) will you have been having d) will you have had
5. anywhere tonight or can I visit you?
- a) Will you be going b) Will you have gone
c) Are you going to go d) Do you go
6. Simone is much better at maths than I am. She the answer to your question.
- a) will have known b) will know
c) will be knowing d) is going to know
7. the Browns at the weekend? Could I ask you to give them this letter from me?
- a) Will you have been visiting b) Are you going to visit
c) Will you be visiting d) Are you visiting
8. We through Coventry as usual, so we can drop in for a cup of coffee. Does three p.m. suit you?
- a) will drive b) will have driven
c) are going to drive d) will be driving
9. Tomorrow at eight, I professor Hansen's lecture in sociology.
- a) will have been attending b) am going to attend
c) attend d) will be attending
10. By the end of this summer, Graham the young dolphins for a year.
- a) will have trained b) is training
c) will be training d) will have been training

II. Put the verbs in the correct Future form.

1. play
 - a. Next Saturday, our team a very important game.
 - b. Before I learn this piece of music by heart, I it a hundred times.
 - c. There are hopes that Nigel in the next match if his knee injury heals.
2. collect
 - a. I've bought this stamp album because I post stamps. My friends have promised to give me a few for a start.
 - b. Mr Newton's arriving at six. Frank and Judith him from the airport.
 - c. By the end of this month, Sue phone cards for two years.
3. talk
 - a. 'Harry doesn't know a thing about what's happened.'
'I to him.'
 - b. As usual, during our next meeting we about existential matters. See you on Friday, then.
 - c. The committee to about fifty candidates by one o'clock.
4. share
 - a. I have just met my new roommates. They've told us we the room for the whole year.
 - b. (you) your book with me? I've forgotten to take mine.
 - c. Each of us is responsible for the damage in part, so we've decided that we the cost of the reparation.
5. blow
 - a. On Thursday, this heavy wind for five days.
 - b. Leave the candles, Sam! Eileen them. It is her birthday, not yours.
 - c. By the time the storm ends, this horrible wind down a great number of trees.

III. Put the verbs in the correct Future form.

1. What (you/do) if you fail another exam?
(you/drop) out of school?
2. Can we leave the utensils here? We (clean) the floor in a moment.
3. I cannot come at nine. I (date) Brian at the time.

4. By the time our children grow up, we (collect) enough money to send them to a good private school.
5. I can tell Janet about the party if you want me to. I (see) her in the office tomorrow.
6. (you/do) any shopping this afternoon? Could you buy me a box of cigars?
7. (Mr Grey/explore) any sunken ships when he goes on his next treasure hunting expedition?
8. ‘The phone’s ringing. It may be the boy.’ ‘I (not answer) it. I don’t want to talk to him.’
9. Don’t come at eleven. I (still/mind) my sister’s baby at the time.
10. We (lose) the game. Our opponents have already scored three goals whereas we have scored none.
11. Look! It’s snowing. We (have) a white Christmas.
12. My father (not lend) me his car. He never lets anyone drive his brand new Ferrari.
13. Why hasn’t the train arrived yet? By three o’clock, we (wait) for it for two hours.
14. ‘I’ve heard Diane is coming to the party.’ ‘So, I (come) too. I’d like to meet her personally.’
15. ‘I can give you a lift to the airport.’ ‘Don’t bother, Steve. Michael (drive) me.’

IV. Put the verbs in the correct Future form.

Mr Thomas is a famous traveller, photographer and nature lover. He spends his every free moment visiting unusual places and observing wild animals. This summer he (plan) to visit the tropical island of Java where he hopes he (take) photos of some unique landscapes and animals. As usual, Mr Thomas (take) his wife Margaret who is a linguist and a nature lover, too. While on Java, Margaret says she (use) her time in most beneficial way. For example, she (learn) as much as possible about the local dialects and if she finds enough time for it, she (try) to pick up a few words in the languages of Java. ‘I’m sure we (have) a really great time on Java.’ – Margaret says. She also says that while on Java she and her husband (celebrate) their wedding anniversary. ‘It (be) a very special day.’ – she says. ‘On August 21st, we (be) married for twenty five years. So far, we’ve lived a happy life and I believe it (not change) in future.’

1.16. Konstrukcja ‘be’ + *infinitive* / *perfect infinitive*

Konstrukcja **be** + **infinitive** (bezokolicznik) stosowana jest w celu wyrażenia polecenia, obowiązku lub instrukcji. Przy jej użyciu można wyrazić jedynie takie czynności, na które możemy wywierać rzeczywisty wpływ. Nie jest ona stosowana do opisu wydarzeń uwarunkowanych przez czynniki zewnętrzne. Konstrukcja ta ma wydźwięk formalny np.

You are to empty the rubbish bins twice a day.

Mr Dean is to report on the Police’s further movements.

Visitors to the Zoo are not to feed the animals in their cages.

Konstrukcja ta dość często stosowana jest w raportach prasowych, gdy mowa jest o zaplanowanych wydarzeniach, które mają nastąpić w niedalekiej przyszłości np.

The Pope is to visit Poland in June this year.

The prime minister is to open the conference.

The investigators are to devise a detailed plan of action.

Konstrukcja **be** + **infinitive** może występować w zdaniach warunkowych np.

If I am to win the regatta, I will need much better equipment.

Our company must be subsidized if we are to adjust to the new quality requirements.

Konstrukcja **be** + **infinitive** może być także stosowana w czasie przeszłym, w celu wyrażenia zamiaru, obowiązku lub polecenia np.

Our sponsors were to provide us with some financial support.

George was to compile the complete list of the candidates.

We were to arrive at six sharp and we did.

Powyzsze zastosowanie zakłada, iż zamierzona czynność została wykonana lub jeszcze nie wiadomo czy doszło do jej realizacji. W przypadku gdy wiadomo, że zamierzona czynność nie doszła do skutku, należy użyć **be** + **perfect infinitive** np.

The council were to have met in Geneva but the meeting was cancelled.

You were to have informed us about your next step. Why didn’t you do it?

The police were to have arrested the drug dealers but their action was a failure.

EXERCISE BANK

I. Complete the following sentences using **be + infinitive**.

Here is the latest news.

The German chancellor has arrived for a three-day official visit in France. He (meet) with the French president this afternoon and both the leaders (take) part in the opening ceremony of the International Agricultural Fair in Paris on Tuesday.

The young descendant to the throne is reported to be getting well after his unfortunate car accident last Sunday. He (leave) hospital next Friday. It has been reported that the passer-by who called the ambulance and saved the young prince's life (receive) a reward from the Queen herself.

The Modern Arts Festival (begin) on Friday in Poznań. Some world-famous artists from a number of countries (arrive) and present their achievements in a series of workshops that will last till Sunday. The President of Poznań (welcome) the artists and guests and he has promised to take part in some workshops.

II. Complete the following sentences using **be + infinitive** or **be + perfect infinitive**.

1. You (take) these pills three times a day if you hope to get better.
2. How long (we/keep) guard at the gates of the palace?
3. 'Have you heard from Jack recently?' Not really. He (phone) me yesterday but he didn't.'
4. You (do) your duties with care my boy. Don't ever forget about it.
5. If I (write) this report by the end of the day, you will have to stop disturbing me.
6. We (go) fishing but it started raining in the morning, so we decided to stay at home and wait till the weather improved.
7. 'Has Tom sent the ordered goods yet?' 'I don't know. He (send) them yesterday.'
8. Don't ever speak rudely to your teachers. You (be) polite at school and outside it.

9. The air show (start) on Sunday but it was cancelled due to bad weather.
10. We must get a move on if we (get) to the station on time.

III. Rewrite the following sentences using **be + infinitive** or **be + perfect infinitive**.

1. We want all our workers to abide by the safety regulations.

All our workers

2. The investments weren't as profitable as we expected.

The investments

3. They expect me to work overtime.

I

4. We didn't sign the deal we hoped we would.

We

5. James told us he'd come back at seven but he didn't.

James

6. I do want you to apologize to the client.

You

7. It was Simon's obligation to confirm the arrangements.

Simon

8. All candidates must submit their CVs and application forms by May 31st.

All candidates

9. Don't touch the switches.

You

10. Do you want me to act as your spokesman?

.....?

11. I set my alarm-clock for eight a.m. but it didn't go off.

My alarm-clock

12. The minister delivers his speech at the beginning of the conference.

The minister

13. This information is strictly confidential. Don't spread it.

You

14. They told us they'd consider our application the following day.

They

15. The witness didn't appear in court although he'd been summoned to.

The witness

PROGRESS TEST

Czasy - Tenses

I. Put the verbs in the correct tense form.

When the war (break) out my father, who (be) then a boy of eleven, (stay) abroad with his parents. They (go) to Cairo where my grandfather – a renowned scholar – (visit) his French friend – a famous mathematician who (live) in Egypt for about ten years. When the news of the war (spread) across Europe, my father and his parents (decide) to return home where they (leave) their family, friends and all their belongings. On October 13th, they (get) on board of an English plane to Madrid. But while they (fly) over the Mediterranean, one of the engines (break) down and the plane (fall) into the sea. My grandparents (die) but luckily my father (survive) the crash. Some Spanish fishermen who (fish) in the area (see) the catastrophe and (hurry) to rescue the survivors. However, by the time they (arrive) in the place of the crash, all the other passengers (die) of hypothermia. My father (be) in a bad state, too but the fishermen's quick help (save) his life. They (take) him to hospital and later when he (get) better they (make) him stay with them in their small fishing village. My father (live) with a poor family of a Spanish fisherman for five years until the war (come) to a definite end. Then, he (make) up his mind to finally return home.

Fans from all over the world (arrive) in Edmonton, Canada, since last week. They (take) part in a great three-day concert that (begin) tomorrow. The organisers (already/sell) out all the tickets, so those who (not book) them in advance (have) no chance of seeing the concert. A great number of rock stars (promise) to appear live on stage and the thousands of fans (hope) to hear their favourite numbers. ‘There’s nothing like a live performance.’ - (say) one fan who (come) from as far as Hungary. Some others (believe) they (meet) their favourite musicians downtown and (take) photos of them.

'I (ask) Bruce Springsteen for his autograph.' – says a young fan from Argentina. The concert (go) on day and night until Wednesday and it is estimated that before it (end), the musicians (play) over five hundred songs. The local shop and hotel owners (expect) the event for months. They are sure they (make) a business of their lives. 'I (store) over one thousand litres of mineral water and half a ton of snacks.' – says one of the shopkeepers. About one thousand policemen and guards (keep) order during the concert and over three hundred doctors and nurses (provide) medical assistance to those in need.

It (be) almost two months since we last (see) our son David. Ever since he (set) out on his lonely travel across South America, he (write) to us several times. In his last letter, which we (receive) yesterday, he writes that he (just/meet) some friendly natives and (spend) some time with them. We are very glad that he (enjoy) himself a lot, but we are a bit worried about him, too. For many years, David (dream) of this trip and (collect) money to make this dream come true. Finally, he (succeed) in collecting enough and on June 12th this year he (get) on a plane to River Plate where his great adventure (begin). Honestly speaking, before this trip, he (never/go) abroad alone but because he (always/be) an adventure seeker, we are convinced he (know) how to overcome any possible difficulties. David (already/visit) the most interesting places in Brazil and Bolivia and now he (head) for Peru which he (always/consider) to be the most wonderful place on Earth. I hope the reality that he (experience) there (match) his imagination of the place. David (always/love) mountains, so it's a sure thing that the Andes (make) a great impression on him, but we hope he (not want) to do any climbing alone. That might be dangerous. David (estimate) that before he (return) home, he (make) over three thousand kilometres in South America alone on foot and hitchhiking. We (already/look) forward to his return.

II. Put the verbs in the correct tense form.

1. mind
 - a. I (not) whether I am paid now or later as long as the amount stays the same.
 - b. 'I have to go out now and there's nobody I can leave my baby with.'
'Don't worry, Jane. I little Brian.'
 - c. Since my neighbours went on holiday, we their four cats.
2. complete
 - a. (Picasso) his last painting before his death?
 - b. Just be patient. I the design by the time you have to present it to the Board.
 - c. There were too many other things to do in the office yesterday, so I (not) the project by the end of the day.
3. interview
 - a. I'm dog tired. They me for two hours.
 - b. I the prime minister in two hours. I am really nervous. It's my first such a challenging assignment.
 - c. After checking our IQ tests, the boss us by himself.
4. increase
 - a. The number of people interested in teleworking steadily for the last two years.
 - b. It is estimated that the prices of gasoline at least two times by the end of this year.
 - c. This is the final decision. We our best workers' wages from tomorrow. They do deserve to be paid more.
5. expect
 - a. We this baby so much for so long that when she was born we were on top of the world.
 - b. As usual, I you at six p.m. Don't be late.
 - c. I Jim the whole afternoon but he phoned at eight to say that he wasn't coming.

III. Put the verbs in the correct tense form.

1. Ever since the crisis (begin), the firm (lay) off a great number of employees
2. I (think) of emigrating for some time but now that the situation (start) to improve, I (change) my mind.
3. Take this medicine. It (not do) any harm to you. It (help) you breathe.

4. I'm not a strict vegetarian. I (not mind) eating eggs but I strongly (object) to killing animals for meat.
5. After Tom (graduate) from university, he (begin) looking for a decent job. But he (not find) one yet.
6. You (be) naughty Sam. Stop sticking your tongue out at the other children or I (make) you stay at home.
7. I (arrange) for you to see the doctor. You (meet) him tomorrow at four thirty.
8. Before he (declare) his eternal love to Martha, Robert (date) a number of other girls none of whom (match) his ideal.
9. (you/dig) the garden? You (look) worn out. I (never/see) you so tired before.
10. As a child, Martha (never/talk) much and she (be) like that ever since I met her.
11. It was midnight when Gillian (wake) up and (hear) some strange noises. At first, she (think) someone (break) into her house and (look) for money and jewellery, but then she (remember) she (agree) to mind her neighbour's cat which, as she soon (realize), (hunt) mice in the cellar.
12. Our children (not see) many of these endangered species in the future. Many of them (die) out by the time they grow up.
13. We couldn't go any further. We (run) out of petrol. We just (not buy) enough before setting out.
14. I (try) to get through for hours but the line's still engaged. I (wonder) who (talk) on the phone all this time.
15. Immigrants (settle) down in this area since the government (announce) it a free settlement zone. So far, about five thousand people (make) their homes here.

IV. Rewrite the sentences using the prompts so the meaning remains the same.

1. Simon expects to obtain the position of a chief accountant.
Simon thinks
2. It is many years since we last had storms like this.
..... for many years.
3. After completing the research, we were given another assignment.
When

4. I'm fed up with his telling the same boring stories again and again. (ALWAYS)
He?
5. When did you start working as a junior clerk?
Since when? ?
6. We have arranged to meet in the casino at eleven. (MEETING)
.....?
7. This area looked different when I lived here. (SINCE)
.....?
8. Do you happen to know what Frank intends to do? (GOING)
.....? ?
9. We bought this computer only a week ago. (HAD)
.....?
10. Where were you at the moment of the bomb explosion? (WHEN)
.....? ?
11. It was the first time I went abroad. (NEVER)
.....?
12. Our final game's on Friday.
We?
13. What do you think of this idea? (FIND)
.....? ?
14. The ambulance didn't arrive early enough to save the man's life.
By the time?
15. We are still interviewing the candidates.
We yet.

V. Put the verbs in the correct tense form.

Reporter: 'How long (compose) music Mr Gibb?"

Mr Gibb: 'When I (be) sixteen I (write) my first simple piece which I later (use) for a song that (become) a hit in 1977. As far as I (remember) by October this year, I (do) this job for twenty five years.'

Reporter: 'It (be) a long time since you last (perform) live on stage. When (your fans/see) you back?"

Mr Gibb: 'Well. Honestly, I (not do) any more live singing. I (not think) of it ever since the problems with my voice began a few years ago. I (have) these problems even earlier but somehow with my doctors' help I (manage) to

cope with them. Now, they (keep) telling me I should never sing too much as my vocal cords are in a really bad shape. That's why I (devote) my life to composing.'

Reporter: 'I (wish) you all the best. Thank you for the interview.'

2. Czasowniki modalne - Modal verbs

2.1. Can, could, may, might - przypuszczenie / prawdopodobieństwo

Czasowniki modalne **could**, **may** oraz **might** mogą być stosowane zamiennie w celu wyrażenia przypuszczenia w czasie teraźniejszym lub w odniesieniu do przyszłości np.

He doesn't look good. He may be ill.

Let's not wait for Mike any longer. He might come late.

She has never been like that. She could be in some kind of trouble.

Zasadniczo nie ma różnicy w znaczeniu pomiędzy czasownikami **could**, **may** i **might** wyrażającymi przypuszczenie. Niekiedy jednak **might** może wskazywać na nieco większą niepewność. Czasownik **could** może być preferowany w sytuacji, gdy nie ma żadnej pewności co do wyrażonej opinii np.

'He hasn't told me his secret.' 'He could think you talk too much.'

'Who should I ask for advice?' 'Ronald might know what to do in this situation.'

Czasownik **can** jest stosowany dla wyrażenia przypuszczenia - prawdopodobieństwa jedynie w ogólnym kontekście, nie zaś w odniesieniu do szczególnej pojedynczej sytuacji np.

The sea water can be very cold in November.

Drunken drivers can cause accidents.

Elk can be seen all over Sweden.

W bardziej formalnym kontekście częściej pojawia się czasownik **may** np.

Binge eating may eventually lead to serious health problems.

Not abiding by the safety regulations may result in electrocution.

Czasownik **can** może także wyrażać niezadowolenie lub krytykę np.

Brian can be really hard to live with at times.

Grey autumn days can be very depressing.

Mr Howard can be very unpleasant.

W pytaniach dotyczących przypuszczenia - prawdopodobieństwa zwykle nie stosuje się czasownika **may**. W zamian, można użyć czasownika **could** np

Could it be true that Mr Jenkins is going to replace Mr Watson?

Could Alan not remember about his son's birthday?

Could the fuse be out of order?

Inną formą stosowaną w pytaniach o przypuszczenie - prawdopodobieństwo jest zwrot **be likely to** lub **be probable that** np.

Is it probable that all of us will be dismissed?

Is it probable that he will change his mind?

Is it very likely to rain in the afternoon?

Is John likely to be infected with flu?

Are these goods likely to be stolen?

W nieco bardziej formalnym kontekście w pytaniu o przypuszczenie - prawdopodobieństwo można zastosować czasownik **might** np.

Might these regulations undergo any radical changes?

Might he be accepted for the position?

W zdaniu przeciążycym czasowniki **may not** oraz **might not** wyrażają przypuszczenie lub prawdopodobieństwo np.

'Why is he feeding the animals?' 'He may not know it is forbidden in the zoo.'

Nobody's talked to Chris yet. He might not be aware of our problems.

Czasowniki **can not (cannot)** lub **could not** wykluczają możliwość zaistnienia określonego prawdopodobieństwa np.

Thieves might enter the bank but they couldn't break the code to the vault.

Fiona can't know about our plans. We've kept them top secret.

Czasowniki **may**, **might**, **could** mogą być stosowane z formą *continuous* w przypadku czynności trwającej lub dla wyrażenia planu – zamierzenia, odnoszącego się do przyszłości np.

'Nobody's answering the phone.' 'They may be having a barbecue in the garden.'

'What's that noise upstairs?' 'The Browns could be quarrelling.'

May, might, can, could mogą być także stosowane z przysłówkami **well** lub **possibly** w celu wyrażenia przypuszczenia - prawdopodobieństwa np.

That man may possibly be a spy.

The interest rates might well increase at the end of this year.

Thoughtlessness of this kind could possibly result in further economic sanctions.

Czasownik **can well** nie jest stosowany w zdaniach odnoszących się do przyszłości. Może on odwoływać się jedynie do sytuacji obecnej np.

You can well tell us about your past experiences.

This can well be the answer to my question.

2.2. Could, may, might + *perfect infinitive* - przypuszczenie / prawdopodobieństwo

Czasowniki **could**, **may** oraz **might** z formą dokonaną **have done** (*perfect infinitive*) wyrażają przypuszczenie dotyczące czynności w czasie przeszłym np.

'I can't find my gloves.' 'You may have left them in the car.'

I saw Susan crying. Someone might have done something wrong to her.

'Brian didn't come to the party.' 'He could have had more important things to do.'

Czasownika **may** nie należy stosować z formą dokonaną *perfect infinitive* jeżeli wiadomo na pewno, że określona możliwość nie zaistniała w rzeczywistości. W takim przypadku stosuje się czasownik **might** lub **could** np.

You might have lost your way if you had not taken the map.

Joe could have asked Sara to forgive him. I don't know why he didn't do it.

Czasowniki **might** oraz **could** z formą *perfect infinitive* mogą być stosowane w pytaniach dotyczących prawdopodobieństwa odnoszącego się do przeszłości np.

Might anyone of them have heard our conversation?

Could Julia have forgotten about the appointment?

W zdaniach przeczących istnieje zasadnicza różnica pomiędzy znaczeniem wyrażanym przez **might not have done**, a **could not have done**. Forma **might not have done** oznacza przypuszczenie np.

'Why didn't Tom pay the bills?' 'He might not have known they were overdue.'
'Sue didn't come to the party.' 'She might not have had enough time.'

Forma **could not have done** stanowi wykluczenie określonej możliwości np.

Mark: 'I think I saw Ryan in the library yesterday.'

Dan: 'You couldn't have seen Ryan around. He's gone abroad.'

Helen: 'I think it was Sam who spread the news.'

Betty: 'Sam couldn't have done it. He knew nothing about it.'

Czasowniki **may**, **might** oraz **could** z formą **have been doing** mogą wyrażać prawdopodobieństwo dotyczące czynności trwającej lub też faktu jej niedawnego zakończenia np.

When I entered the room the computer was on. Someone may have been using it.

It was silent. The campers could have been sleeping in their tents.

Might oraz **could + perfect infinitive** mogą być także stosowane z przysłówkami **well** oraz **possibly** w celu wyrażenia czynności lub sytuacji, jaka zaistniałaby w czasie przeszłym, gdy spełniony został określony warunek. Takie zastosowanie zakłada wykorzystanie trybu warunkowego III (\Rightarrow 4.4. str. 135) np.

George could possibly have agreed if you had tried harder to convince him.

He might well have died if he hadn't been operated on immediately.

Niekiedy czasowniki modalne **may**, **might** oraz **could** z formą **perfect infinitive** stosowane są zamiast czasu **Future Perfect** (\Rightarrow 1.14. str. 58) w celu wyrażenia prawdopodobieństwa, iż określona czynność zostanie wykonana - zakończona do danego momentu w przyszłości np.

By tomorrow, all tickets for the concert may have been sold out.

Before the police arrive, the burglars might have escaped.

Joan could have got better by next Sunday.

Czasownik **might** z formą bezokolicznikową (*infinitive*) może także wyrażać prawdopodobieństwo zaistnienia określonej sytuacji lub czynności w czasie przeszłym, będącej następstwem naturalnych okoliczności lub obowiązujących zasad np.

In primitive times, people might kill other people without being punished.

Before the new law was passed, the police might listen in on private talks.

EXERCISE BANK

I. Choose the correct answer or answers.

1. ‘Why hasn’t Eva invited me to her party?’ ‘She that you’re back in town.’
a) may not know b) couldn’t have known
c) might not know d) cannot know
2. ‘It’s not clear why there are so many dead fish in this lake.’
‘The water contaminated.’
a) could have been b) may be
c) might be d) could well be
3. Mr Blackley wasn’t in his office at three. He in a meeting.
a) could be participating b) might have been participating
c) may have been participating d) could have participated
4. Julia looks worried these days. She some problems at work.
a) could be having b) might have
c) may have had d) could have
5. ‘The clerk called me sir and was exceptionally kind.’ ‘He you were someone important.’
a) may have thought b) could think
c) could have thought d) might think
6. ‘The police didn’t realize the man that they stopped was the criminal they’d been looking for for so long. And they let him go.’
‘Well. The man a disguise.’
a) might be wearing b) could have been wearing
c) may have been wearing d) might have been wearing
7. ‘The elderly lady refuses to open the door. She we are thieves.’
‘Please, open the door, madam. We’re not thieves. We’re from the electricity board.’
a) could think b) may have thought
c) might have thought d) may think
8. ‘I’ve just talked to your wife, Mike. She’s very nice.’ ‘It my wife. I’m not married.’
a) might not be b) couldn’t have been
c) may not have been d) couldn’t be
9. Let’s talk to the other witness. She what happened that night.
a) could have remembered b) may remember
c) might remember d) may have remembered

10. ‘..... my briefcase by mistake?’ ‘That’s possible. I saw him leave with a black briefcase in his hand.’
- a) Might Erik have taken b) Could Erik have taken
c) May Erik have taken d) Might Erik take

II. Complete the sentences with the appropriate phrases using **may**, **might**, **can** or **could** + *infinitive* or *perfect infinitive*.

- | | |
|--|--------------------------------------|
| a. be promised a promotion | f. not score a goal |
| b. discover that he was being followed | g. take a day off |
| c. make you lose your temper | h. not be aware of |
| d. result in serious health problems | i. be set on fire |
| e. have a love affair | j. not want to share his experiences |

1. I didn’t see Jack in the office yesterday. He
-
2. Smoking cigarettes for a long time
-
3. Suddenly, the man started running. He
-
4. Adam’s been in perfect mood since he talked to the boss. He
-
5. Damon He never talks much about himself.
6. You must be wrong. Richard He simply didn’t play in the match.
7. Ms Harper insists on joining the expedition team. She how dangerous the expedition will be.
8. Mark’s really annoying at times. He like nobody else I know.
9. ‘I’ve seen Jim kissing a young woman in the park, but it wasn’t his wife for sure.’
‘He ,’
10. ‘The police haven’t yet discovered why the historic building burnt down.’
‘It by someone .’

III. Complete the sentences using **may**, **might**, **can** or **could** + *infinitive* or *perfect infinitive*.

1. ‘The other day I came across your brother in the supermarket. He’s grown a lot.’
‘It (not be) my brother. I simply don’t have one.’
2. ‘I wonder why Mr Grant’s hired a professional security agency to protect him.’
‘Someone (threaten) him.’
3. ‘How did Alan get to know about the surprise we were preparing for him?’
‘I haven’t got a clue. One of the children (tell) him.’
4. ‘Who’s that dark-haired boy walking by Gina’s side?’
‘I haven’t seen him before. He (be) her new boyfriend.’
5. ‘My eyesight has deteriorated since I started working for the computer company.’
‘You (spend) too much time in front of the computer screen every day’
6. ‘Mathew is certainly older than he looks.’
‘But he (not be) older than 30, I’m sure.’
7. ‘What (Erika/experience)?’
‘I have no idea what it was but she did look scared.’
8. ‘Who’s making that horrible noise?’
‘It’s probably our neighbours. They (have) a row again.’
9. ‘Why didn’t Ronald tell me he was going to the automobile exhibition?’
‘He (not know) you were an enthusiast of old automobiles.’
10. ‘There are some fragile items in the boxes. They (get) broken if you don’t carry them carefully.’
‘All right. I’ll remember that.’

IV. Rewrite the sentences using **may**, **might**, **can** or **could** + *infinitive* or *perfect infinitive* so the meaning remains the same.

1. Vincent is likely to be in the possession of the files you’re looking for.
Vincent
2. It’s impossible that Frank knows the password.
Frank
3. Perhaps, Mrs Adams thought the man was a burglar.
Mrs Adams
4. The temperature is likely to be lower up in the mountains.
The temperature
5. Maybe John didn’t realize he was the owner of the winning ticket.
John

6. I'm sure it wasn't my children who broke the window.
My children
7. This scheme is likely to bring no benefit at all.
This scheme
8. Speeding motorists very often constitute a great danger to other drivers.
Speeding motorists
9. Is the sergeant likely to have ignored the captain's order?
.....?
10. Perhaps, their offer was the most attractive of all.
Their offer

2.3. Can, could, be able to - zdolność, umiejętność, możliwość

Czasownik **can** jest stosowany dla wyrażenia umiejętności, zdolności lub możliwości w czasie teraźniejszym np.

*Thomas can speak three languages.
Can you play basketball?
I can't ride a horse.*

W czasie przeszłym powyższe znaczenia można wyrazić przy pomocy czasownika **could** np.

*My grandmother could tell the most wonderful stories of all.
Could you tell the time when you were five?
Sorry. We couldn't visit you last Monday.*

Zamiast czasowników **can** oraz **could** można użyć zwrot **be able to**, odmieniając czasownik **be** we właściwym czasie np.

*Mrs O'Connor doesn't need assistance. She is able to walk by herself.
Is this young worker able to operate the conveyor belt?
The mechanic isn't able to repair this engine.*

*I was able to stand on my head only a few years ago.
Was the historian able to specify the time when the sculpture was made?
We weren't able to recover all the money we had invested in this risky business.*

Zazwyczaj zwrot **be able to** stosowany jest w sytuacji, gdy mowa jest o szczególnym, pojedynczym wydarzeniu, zwłaszcza takim, które wymaga określonych umiejętności lub podjęcia większego wysiłku np.

*Now that you've told me what the problem is, I am able to give you some advice.
The situation was really tense but thanks to his unique skills the negotiator was able
to make the opposing sides reconcile.*

Zwrotu **be able to** nie stosuje się w sytuacji, kiedy opisywana czynność wykonywana jest w tej samej chwili, gdy jest o niej mowa. W takiej sytuacji zwykle stosuje się czasownik **can** np.

*'Just look at William. Isn't he a great athlete?' 'Oh yes. He can run really fast.'
Joan is playing tennis with Mark at the moment. She can play quite well.*

Zwrot **be able to** jest stosowany w formach oraz czasach, w których czasownika **can** oraz **could** użyć nie można ze względów gramatycznych. Dotyczy to czasów **Perfect** oraz **Future Simple**, konstrukcji bezokolicznikowych, formy **Gerund**, imiesłowów oraz zastosowania po innym czasowniku modalnym.

Czasownik **be** występujący przed **able to** można zastosować w każdej z powyższych form np.

Present Perfect: *Frank hasn't been able to walk since the accident.*

Past Perfect: *Before the accident, Frank had been able to walk.*

Future Simple: *When will you be able to return to work?*

Bezokolicznik: *That woman claims to be able to tell the future from tea leaves.*

Gerund: *I regret not being able to celebrate the anniversary with you.*

Imiesłów: *Being able to speak Japanese, Ron could partake in the talks.*

Czasownik modalny: *Ed might be able to help us with the removal.*

Niektóre czasowniki, niezależnie od sytuacji, częściej występują z **can** oraz **could**, niż z **be able to**. Należą do nich czasowniki opisujące czynności narządów zmysłów: **feel, hear, observe, see, smell, taste** oraz czasowniki opisujące czynność umysłową: **believe, decide, imagine, recognize, remember, understand, think** np.

I couldn't recognize Alan at the airport.

Why do you say you cannot think clearly?

Can you feel anything when I touch your hand?

Can you imagine yourself working so far away from home?

You could always smell the same odour as you entered the building.

2.4. Could (not) + *perfect infinitive* - zdolność, umiejętności, możliwość

Czasownik **could** + *perfect infinitive* jest stosowany w celu wyrażenia zdolności - możliwości, która albo nie została zrealizowana, albo nie wiadomo, czy doszło do jej realizacji w czasie przeszłym np.

We could have taken the shorter route. We'd have arrived earlier, then.

Bob and Lisa could have been such a nice couple if only they hadn't split up.

Adam: '*I have no idea why Mandy resigned.*'

Betty: '*She could have been offered a better job by someone.*'

Jeżeli nie wiadomo, czy doszło do realizacji określonej możliwości, zdanie z czasownikiem **could** + *perfect infinitive* nabiera znaczenia przypuszczenia np.

'Susan went out two hours ago and she's not returned yet.'

'Don't worry. She could have met a friend and gone for a cup of coffee.'

Niekiedy forma **could** + *perfect infinitive* nabiera znaczenia irytacji lub wyrzutu spowodowanego niespełnieniem określonej możliwości np.

I didn't sleep the whole night. You could have told me you were having a party.

Jack could have warned us about the inspection. Why didn't he do it?

Forma przecząca **could not** + *perfect infinitive* stanowi wykluczenie prawdopodobieństwa zaistnienia określonej możliwości np.

Wes couldn't have seen me in the cinema. I was somewhere else at the time.

Peter couldn't have betrayed us. He's on our side.

EXERCISE BANK

I. Choose the correct answer or answers.

1. When we were schoolboys, we ice hockey very well.
a) were able to play b) could have played c) could play
2. I'm really sorry I you in this respect.
a) couldn't help b) am not able to help c) cannot help
3. Our baby for three weeks now.
a) could have walked b) can walk c) has been able to walk

4. If the police had been faster, they the thieves red-handed.
a) were able to catch b) could have caught c) could catch
5. Now that you have got better, to your normal duties?
a) are you able to return b) can you return c) could you have returned
6. If everything goes well, the administrators the new software tomorrow.
a) are able to install b) could install c) will be able to install
7. You to Mary for all those rude remarks. She wouldn't have taken offence, then.
a) could have apologized b) were able to apologize c) could apologize
8. remember what happened that evening, Mr Palmer?
a) Are you able to b) Can you c) Could you
9. We our mobile phones until we reached the civilized regions of the country.
a) hadn't been able to use b) couldn't have used c) weren't able to use
10. The headache's killing me. The only thing I is lie down and have a nap.
a) am able to do b) could do c) can do

II. Complete the sentences with the appropriate phrases using **can**, **could** + *infinitive* / *perfect infinitive* or **be able to**.

- | | |
|-----------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| a. do everything by myself | f. not deliver the letters |
| b. not fall asleep | g. arrange a meeting |
| c. play by ear | h. not hear well |
| d. go up and repair the aerial | i. remember people's phone numbers |
| e. misunderstand the instructions | j. lend you some money |

1. 'Those two young workers didn't do exactly what I asked them to.' 'They ,
2. My neighbour works as the chairman's assistant. She for you.'
3. I until the nurse gave me a tranquilizer injection.
4. Simon was a very clever child. He when he was only three.
5. There was nobody at home so the postman
.....

6. I'm fine now. I
You can tell the nurse she needn't come tomorrow.
7. We had no idea you were in dire straits. If only you had told us we
.....
8. When the ice on the roof melts down, we
.....
9. Before he even learned to compose, Joseph
.....
10. Michael
He must wear a hearing aid.

III. Complete the sentences using **be able to, can or could + infinitive** or **perfect infinitive** and the appropriate verbs from the box.

be cause fulfill have keep listen to make repair see wait

1. My grandfather old clocks and watches. He's a watchmaker by profession.
2. 'Last Sunday, Charlie and I went fishing and imagine what: I caught a piranha.'
'That's impossible. It (not) a piranha. They don't live in this part of the world.'
3. Rick (never) a secret and that's why we never told him about our intentions.
4. Driving at 100 kilometres per hour through the city was totally irresponsible.
You a serious accident.
5. I (not) a clear decision now. I am still considering all the pros and cons.
6. All that the witness was saying was a pack of lies. I (not) that any longer and so I left the courtroom.
7. When (I) my baby? When will the nurses bring my little darling to me?
8. We decided to replace Nelson with a new worker. He (never) his duties the way we expected him to.
9. Our team another chance if only we had asked for it. We shouldn't have given in so easily.
10. The soldiers haven't seen their beloved for months. They (not) to see them again.

2.5. May, might, can, could, be allowed to - pozwolenie

Czasowniki **may**, **might**, **can** oraz **could** są stosowane dla wyrażenia pozwolenia lub jego braku w czasie teraźniejszym. Najpowszechniej stosowanym czasownikiem w tym znaczeniu jest **can** np.

We can use the computers whenever we want to.

You can't leave the camp at night.

I can watch films late at night.

Pozwolenie lub jego brak można także wyrazić przy pomocy czasownika **may**.

Zwykle jest on stosowany w pojedynczej sytuacji przy udzielaniu pozwolenia lub wyrażaniu zakazu, odnoszącego się do innych osób np.

You may ask me any questions you like.

Tom may use our phone. We don't mind it.

Our parents say we may play outdoors till it gets dark.

Czasownik **can** wyraża pozwolenie lub jego brak w bardziej ogólnym sensie w oparciu o obowiązujące zasady lub zwyczaje np.

We can park here.

Nobody can bathe in the river. It's too dangerous.

You can borrow no more than two books at a time from the library.

Czasownik **may** zwykle pojawia się w kontekstach formalnych lub w wyrażeniach bezosobowych np.

One may object to being searched by an unauthorized officer.

The police may keep your driving license if they catch you drunken driving.

W pytaniach o pozwolenie powszechnie stosuje się czasowniki **can**, **could** oraz **may**.

Czasowniki **could** oraz **may** mogą być stosowane w bardziej formalnych okolicznościach lub jako formy grzecznościowe np.

Could I ask you a personal question, sir?

Can we eat as many sweets as we want to, mom?

May we visit our daughter in hospital at any time?

Czasownik **might** może być stosowany w pytaniach o pozwolenie w sytuacjach formalnych. Jego użycie zwykle sugeruje większą dozę niepewności np.

Might we borrow some money from you?

Might I use the company data during my presentation?

Czasowniki **can** oraz **could** mogą wystąpić w pytaniach o pozwolenie w postaci przeczącej, jako forma wskazująca na to, że osoba zainteresowana oczekuje pozytywnej odpowiedzi np.

Can't I leave my car in your backyard?

Couldn't we wear casual clothes at the ceremony?

Czasowniki **could** oraz **might** wyrażające pozwolenie lub jego brak są stosowane w trybie przypuszczającym lub w mowie zależnej np.

Could we borrow your car if we paid you for that?

Might I stand for Mr Harris while he is away?

Joe told me I could ride his bike whenever I wanted to.

Ms Thompson asked if she might suggest her own solution to the problem.

W czasie przeszłym pozwolenie lub jego brak można wyrazić przy pomocy czasownika **could** np.

When I was a child I could come home later than eight o'clock.

Could you eat as much ice-cream as you wanted to in summer?

In those hard times, you couldn't speak your mind freely.

W czasie przeszłym pozwolenie lub jego brak można także wyrazić przy użyciu zwrotu **be allowed to**. Najczęściej jest on jednak stosowany w pojedynczej szczególnej sytuacji np.

Only some journalists were allowed to enter the laboratories.

Was James allowed to drink champagne at the wedding?

My sister was allowed to watch the film but I wasn't.

Zwrot **be allowed to** można użyć w każdej formie czasowej, choć najczęściej pojawia się on w sytuacjach, w których czasownika **can** użyć nie można tj. w czasach **Perfect**, **Future Simple**, w formie bezokolicznikowej, **Gerund**, imiesłowowej oraz po innym czasowniku modalnym np.

Present Perfect: I have been allowed to smoke since I turned eighteen.

Future Simple: Soon, you will be allowed to carry out experiments on your own.

bezokolicznik: It is good to be allowed to do what one feels like.

Gerund: Mike thanked us for being allowed to use our equipment.

imiesłów: Being allowed to use the company data, the man sold it to spies.

czasownik modalny: We may be allowed to bathe in the lake when it gets warmer.

EXERCISE BANK

I. Choose the correct answer or answers.

1. extravagant clothes and jewellery at school?
a) Can you wear b) Are you allowed to wear
c) May you wear d) Might you wear
2. As children, we with toy guns.
a) were never allowed to play b) never might play
c) never could play d) never may play
3. You the conference room if you don't have an invitation.
a) couldn't enter b) mayn't enter
c) are not allowed to enter d) mightn't enter
4. When you grow up, you pubs and order beer.
a) may be allowed to enter b) will be allowed to enter
c) might enter d) can enter
5. ' you a favour, Jim?' 'Sure. What can I do for you?'
a) May I ask b) Can I ask
c) Could I ask d) Might I ask
6. For many years, the citizens of the country abroad until everything changed after the revolution in 1988.
a) might not travel b) could not travel
c) hadn't been allowed to travel d) may not travel
7. If only we our products abroad, our firm would develop much faster.
a) could sell b) may sell
c) might sell d) were allowed to sell
8. The patrol stopped the man and confiscated his camera. He explained he had no idea he photographs in the military area.
a) might not take b) wasn't allowed to take
c) can't take d) could not take
9. Why in the sea? Is the water too cold?
a) aren't we allowed to bathe b) couldn't we bathe
c) mightn't we bathe d) can't we bathe

10. You for ducks in this area if only you had asked for permission.
- a) were allowed to hunt b) could hunt
c) could have been allowed to hunt d) might be allowed to hunt

II. Complete the following sentences using **may**, **might**, **can**, **could** or **be allowed to** and the verbs in the brackets.

1. ‘Mom! (I/invite) my school friends to my birthday party?’
‘Of course, darling. How many of them would you like to invite?’
2. The police officer said we (not use) the road as there had been an accident and the road was closed.
3. ‘Since when (you/not drive) your father’s car?’ ‘Since I bumped against a tree and broke the rear lamp.’
4. ‘Why didn’t you copy the files?’
‘I thought I (not do) it without asking you for permission first.’
5. ‘..... (I/ask) you a personal question?’ ‘Sure. What is it?’
6. When we were at the camp, we (not bathe) in the lake whenever we wanted to.
7. When you take the vows of secrecy, you (read) the documents marked as strictly confidential.
8. Your friends (spend) some time in our villa in the mountains if they promised not to leave it in a mess.
9. Your little brother is only two. He (act) in a childish way but you’re old enough to know the rules, Sean.
10. Since she was operated on, Mrs Wilson (not eat) fried food and sweets.

2.6. Have (got) to, need to, must - konieczność, obowiązek

Czasowniki **have (got) to**, **need to** oraz **must** stosowane są w celu wyrażenia konieczności oraz obowiązku w czasie teraźniejszym lub przyszłym np.

You must feed your guinea pig regularly.

Simon has (got) to attend extra lessons in the evening.

Tell Sarah she must visit us next time she comes to Leeds

I think you need to take all the pros and cons into consideration.

We have (got) to notify our clients of the changes as soon as possible.

Czasowniki **have (got) to** oraz **need to** można użyć w czasach oraz formach gramatycznych, w których czasownika **must** nie używa się. Dotyczy to czasów **Perfect**, **Past Simple**, **Future Simple**, formy bezokolicznikowej, **Gerund**, imiesłówów oraz po czasownikach modalnych np.

Since I started working here, I have had to report to my boss everyday.

When you graduate from university, you will need to look for a job.

When winter comes, you may need to change the tyres in your car.

We never needed to stay after school in our times.

It is boring to have to do the same tasks everyday.

I hate having to do the washing so often.

Przy pomocy czasowników **have (got) to**, **need to** oraz **must** można także utworzyć pytanie dotyczące konieczności lub obowiązku np.

Do you have to give us so much homework everyday?

Will we have to fill in any forms in the bank?

Have I got to include any extra documents?

Did the driver need to call an ambulance?

What must we do to obtain a loan?

W zdaniach przeczących w celu wyrażenia braku konieczności lub obowiązku stosuje się czasowniki **have (got) to** lub **need to** np.

You don't have to learn all these phone numbers by heart.

We don't need to book tickets for the performance.

I haven't got to write the test once again.

Czasownik **must not** wyraża zakaz podobnie jak **can not**, **may not** lub **not be allowed to** np.

'Can I open the window?' 'No you mustn't do it while the baby isn't dressed.'

You mustn't cross the road while the red light is on.

Our children mustn't watch horror films.

Czasowniki **have (got) to** lub **need to** najczęściej stosowane są, gdy mowa jest o stałych lub odgórnie narzuconych obowiązkach np.

At this school, we have to take exams every term.

Our players need to take part in every training session.

The nurses have got to monitor the patients' condition regularly.

Czasownik **must** najczęściej jest stosowany w sytuacjach pojedynczych lub, gdy określona konieczność wynika z decyzji osoby wypowiadającej ją np.

I must phone my dentist to make and appointment next week.

The staircase is so dirty. I must clean it.

Czasownik **must** jest także stosowany w przypadku, gdy określona konieczność jest narzucona drugiej osobie przez osobę wypowiadającą ją np.

You must write this report once again. I insist on it.

Jack must tell us the whole story from the start.

Czasownik **must** może wyrażać prawdopodobieństwo lub pewność w oparciu o określone fakty wskazujące na taki stan rzeczy np.

Adam's been working till late this week. He must be awfully tired.

Liam is a thoroughly spoilt child. His parents must indulge him too much.

W języku potocznym podobne znaczenie można wyrazić przy użyciu czasownika **have (got) to** np.

The Dawsons have got to be very rich people judging by their extravagant lifestyle.

The guide wants us to climb the rope ladder. He's got to be mad.

W czasie przeszłym podobną konkluzję lub prawdopodobieństwo wyraża się przy użyciu **must + perfect infinitive** np.

They know our plans. Someone must have told them.

You're here already. You must have been driving like crazy.

Leo's taken the other job. They must have offered to pay him more.

Zaprzeczenie takiej konkluzji lub prawdopodobieństwa zwykle wyrażane jest przy użyciu czasowników **can't / couldn't** oraz **couldn't + perfect infinitive** np.

This can't be Mr Hobson. I've seen him once. He's much taller.

You couldn't have seen Elvis Presley in the park. He died many years ago.

Czasownik **need** może funkcjonować jako czasownik modalny. Najczęściej stosuje się go w pytaniach oraz zaprzeczeniach np.

Need I paint this wall again?

You needn't come to work on Saturday.

Zwykła forma przecząca **needn't** stosowana jest w celu wyrażenia braku konieczności lub obowiązku w stosunku do drugiej osoby np.

'Do we have to wait for you?' 'No you needn't do it.'

'Need I say hello to everybody?' 'Of course you needn't.'

You needn't help me carry the suitcase. I can manage on my own.

W zdaniach twierdzących czasownik **need** może pojawić się z przysłówkami **hardly**, **only**, **scarcely** w kontekście formalnym np.

I need hardly to remind you of the losses our company made last year.

We need scarcely point out to the number of complaints we have received this year.

EXERCISE BANK

I. Choose the correct answer or answers.

1. You the suitcases by yourself, sir. You can call the porter.
a) don't need to carry b) mustn't carry
c) needn't carry d) don't have to carry
2. Because of the recession, we off about fifty people last year.
a) had got to lay b) needed to lay
c) must have laid d) had to lay
3. ‘..... the dog every two hours?’ ‘Of course not. Three times a day is enough.’
a) Have I got to walk b) Need I walk
c) Must I walk d) Do I need to walk
4. You the film. I've seen it twice. It's fantastic.
a) must have seen b) have got to see
c) have to see d) must see
5. If you fail the exam, you it again some time in the future.
a) will need to take b) must take it
c) have got to take d) will have to take
6. There at least twenty thousand people at the stadium. I've never seen it so crowded before.
a) needs to be b) has got to be
c) need be d) must be

7. It's been raining. You the plants in the garden.
- a) needn't water
 - b) haven't got to water
 - c) mustn't water
 - d) don't have to water
8. Our neighbours built a really big house. The loan they had taken from the bank huge.
- a) needed to be
 - b) had got to be
 - c) must be
 - d) must have been
9. How often the works in this old grandfather's clock?
- a) do you need to grease
 - b) must you grease
 - c) have you got to grease
 - d) need you grease
10. These little toys to children under two. If they swallowed them, they might suffocate.
- a) don't have to be given
 - b) needn't be given
 - c) mustn't be given
 - d) haven't got to be given

II. Complete the following sentences using **have (got) to**, **need (to)** or **must** and the appropriate verbs in the correct form.

be contain do dive go out
provide renovate salute swallow undergo

1. Since he was appointed the chief accountant, Mr Harris much more work than before.
2. I (not) the flat. The previous owners had done it up before selling it to me.
3. When you move out of your parents' house, you for yourself.
4. Just look at the wrinkles on her face. Mrs Boyles about seventy.
5. I know you dislike the medicine everyday, but I assure you it's good for your health.
6. Gina looks alone and depressed. She more and try to make friends.
7. You (not) deeper than ten metres without the aqualung.
You're not experienced enough.
8. Jerry told me he three operations before his eyesight improved.
9. ‘..... (we) every time we pass an officer?’ ‘Of course. It's part and parcel of being a soldier.’
10. After reading the letter, Fiona burst out crying. It some distressing news.

2.7. Didn't have to, didn't need to, needn't have - konieczność, obowiązek

Czasowniki **didn't have to** oraz **didn't need to** wyrażają brak konieczności lub obowiązku w czasie przeszłym. Zwykle oznacza to, iż czynność do której się odnoszą nie została wykonana np.

We didn't have to make sandwiches. Mary had made enough before we arrived.

I didn't need to pay extra for the boat cruise. It was included in the trip price.

Czasownik **needn't have done** opisuje czynność, która została wykonana, pomimo braku takiej konieczności. Znaczenie to jednak nie posiada zabarwienia krytyki np.

You needn't have brought another bottle of wine. We've got plenty of it in the cellar.

Sue needn't have called the ambulance. Her baby was perfectly healthy.

EXERCISE BANK

I. Choose one correct answer.

1. Ms Haley food. She wasn't going to organise a birthday party.
a) didn't need to prepare b) needn't have prepared
2. We've got enough wine. You another bottle. Thanks, anyway.
a) needn't have brought b) didn't have to bring
3. The captain let his soldiers have some fun in town. They in the barracks that night.
a) needn't have stayed b) didn't need to stay
4. I had a day off. I early, so I stayed in bed till midday.
a) didn't need to get up b) needn't have got up
5. 'I've taken my ID, driving license, passport, health policy and also'
'You all these documents. One of them will do.'
a) didn't have to take b) needn't have taken
6. There weren't too many people at the stadium gates. We in a long queue.
a) didn't have to wait b) needn't have waited
7. While Mark and the children were away on holiday, I much cooking at home.
a) didn't need to do b) needn't have done
8. I my old electric cooker. The new one I've bought is much worse.
a) needn't have sold b) didn't have to sell

9. You such a long way to deliver the files. You could have sent them by e-mail.
a) didn't need to drive b) needn't have driven
10. Fortunately, we off any workers as our financial situation started to improve when we had signed the new contracts.
a) needn't have laid b) didn't have to lay

II. Complete the sentences using **didn't have to** or **needn't have done**.

1. We (install) the gas heating. It cost a lot but it isn't as effective as we thought it would be.
2. 'I've taken my climbing shoes.' 'You (carry) them all the way. We're not going to do any climbing. I'm sorry, Jim.'
3. 'I've paid the plumber for repairing the broken pipe.' 'You (do) it. I gave him an advance payment.'
4. The flat we hired was all done up. We (redecorate) it. We just fixed our furniture and things. That was it!
5. We (make) the survey. Nobody was interested in it. It was a sheer waste of time.
6. Sam wasn't in that bad condition. He (stay) in hospital. He was just given a painkiller injection and returned home.
7. I (wait) long for my flight. The moment I arrived at the airport, I heard the departure call.
8. What are we going to do with all these posters? Nobody wants to take them. We (print) so many of them.
9. We (hire) extra hands. We managed to unload the trucks on our own. It may have taken longer, but at least we saved the money.
10. I used to have a membership card. It meant I (pay) for drinks in the club.

2.8. Should, ought to + infinitive / perfect infinitive - powinność, obowiązek, prawdopodobieństwo

Czasowniki modalne **should** oraz **ought to** stosowane są w celu wyrażenia obowiązku lub powinności w czasie teraźniejszym lub przyszłym. Czasownik **should** jest bardziej powszechnie stosowany niż **ought to**, choć nie ma różnic w znaczeniu pomiędzy obydwoma czasownikami. Znaczenie jakie wyrażają często przybiera formę rekomendacji lub porady np.

You don't look good. You should see a doctor.

Mike ought to learn more if he hopes to pass his exams.

Christopher oughtn't to answer back his teachers. It's rude.

We shouldn't be driving so fast. The road is slippery and very dangerous.

Niekiedy znaczenie wyrażane przy pomocy czasowników **should** oraz **ought to** wskazuje na obowiązek np.

The guards should make sure that nobody enters the area without a valid pass.

Children ought to remember about doing their homework.

Czasowniki **should** oraz **ought to** mogą także wyrażać prawdopodobieństwo lub konkluzję w czasie teraźniejszym lub przyszłym np.

I put some nails in the box yesterday. They should still be there.

They've been getting ready the whole afternoon. They ought to be ready by now.

W czasie przeszły czasowniki **should** oraz **ought to** występują z formą **perfect infinitive**. Zdanie twierdzące zwykle opisuje obowiązek lub powinność, która nie została spełniona. Dlatego znaczenie to często ma charakter krytyki np.

You should have told me you had cancelled your holiday plans. Why didn't you do it?

Samuel ought to have listened to my advice. He wouldn't have got into trouble, then.

Zdanie przeczące wyraża przeciwnie znaczenie. Dotyczy ono czynności, która została wykonana niepotrzebnie lub wbrew czyjejś woli. Znaczenie to również może mieć charakter krytyki np.

Tom shouldn't have interfered in Mary's private matters. It was wrong.

You oughtn't to have lied to your parents. What if they discover the truth?

Czasowniki **should** oraz **ought to** z formą *perfect infinitive* mogą także wyrażać prawdopodobieństwo, wniosek lub spodziewany rezultat określonej czynności w czasie przeszłym, obecnie lub w czasie przyszłym np.

It's ten p.m. now. Mike's plane should have already landed in New York.

We gave him ten hours to do the task. He should have finished by now.

By next Friday, they ought to have completed repairing the road.

Innym sposobem wyrażenia sugestii lub porady w czasie teraźniejszym jest zastosowanie zwrotu **had better**. Nie posiada on jednak formy czasu przeszłego i jest stosowany jedynie w odniesieniu do pojedynczych sytuacji np.

You'd better hurry up if you don't want to miss your bus.

We'd better not disturb Ms Craven. She's got some really important job to do.

Formę sugestii można także wyrazić przy pomocy pytania w postaci przeczącej np.

Hadn't you better change your socks? It'd be unwise to keep walking in wet ones.

Hadn't Mick better ask Mr Taylor for permission before borrowing his car?

EXERCISE BANK

I. Complete the following sentences with **should** + *infinitive* or *perfect infinitive* and the appropriate verbs in the correct form.

accept behave deliver follow inform
know mend propose take waste

1. Why didn't you tell me the interest rate was so high? You me about it when I came to ask for the loan?
2. Let's ask Anna this question. She the answer. She studied biology for five years.
3. You (not) like that. You offended all our guests with those rude remarks of yours.
4. The French cyclist has been disqualified for three years. He (not) drugs.
5. They told me to come and collect my shoes at five. It's six now and I think they them by now.
6. I to Janet. I still love her even though she's getting married to another man.

7. I don't think you need all this rubbish you keep buying. You
(not) your money on that.
8. '..... (I) Mr Bone's offer of sixty thousand?' 'Of course you should.
It would have been a really good deal.'
9. We've already mailed the goods Ms Lee's ordered. They to her
by the end of this week.
10. 'Diane advised me to write a complaint but I didn't listen to her.' 'How silly! You
..... her advice.'

II. Complete the following sentences with **ought to** + *infinitive* or *perfect infinitive* and the appropriate phrases.

- | | |
|---------------------------|--------------------------|
| a. take rash decisions | f. know better |
| b. wear some warm clothes | g. invest the money |
| c. be any fights | h. tease it |
| d. see a specialist | i. bring my wife flowers |
| e. charge it | j. take a good rest |

1. Muriel when the problem began. She wouldn't have had to be operated on then.
2. Stop fooling around like the kids are. You're much older than them, Frank.
You
3. 'Ouch! The dog's bitten me on the hand.' 'You (not).'
4. Let's consider all the arguments once again. We (not). The situation is very delicate.
5. We've sent Adam on a two-week holiday to Hawaii. He by the time he comes back to his duties.
6. You when you go skiing in the Alps. It tends to be really frosty at this time of the year.
7. 'Unfortunately the battery is low. I'm afraid we won't go far.'
'You before setting out. I can't believe you forgot about it.'
8. I'm really angry with Peter. He (not) before consulting it with our financial adviser. Now it's lost.
9. '..... (I) ?' 'Of course. If you do that, she will certainly forgive you.'
10. There (not) during the match. The club authorities have hired a professional security agency to keep order.

2.9. Shall, should - inne zastosowania

Czasowniki modalne **shall**, **should**, **will** oraz **would** mogą wyrażać szereg rozmaitych znaczeń i występować w szczególnych kontekstach znaczeniowych.

Czasowniki **shall** oraz **should** mogą być użyte w pytaniach grzecznościowych, stanowiących formę propozycji lub oferty np.

*Shall I bring you a glass of water, madam?
Should we water the plants?*

Mogą one także być stosowane w pytaniach przybierających formę prośby o potwierdzenie, poradę lub informację np.

*Shall I check the wiring in the whole building?
What should I do with all these documents?*

Czasownik **shall** jest stosowany w pytaniach stanowiących formę sugestii lub propozycji np.

*Shall we eat out tonight?
Shall we buy Frank a birthday present?
Let's go sailing in the morning, shall we?*

Niekiedy w języku formalnym czasownik **shall** jest stosowany w celu podkreślenia definitywnego zamiaru lub chęci wykonania określonej czynności. Wzmacnia on wówczas znaczenie głównego czasownika. Znaczenie takie może być interpretowane jako forma obietnicy, postanowienia lub nawet groźby np.

*Frank shall have his bicycle back. I promise.
Those boys who beat my son shall be punished.
You shall not have to pay so much next time you stay in our hotel.*

W wyjątkowych sytuacjach czasownik **shall** może także wyrażać silną determinację np.

*I shall fight with corruption if I am the prime minister.
We shall not give in so easily.*

Potocznie jednak w tym samym kontekście stosuje się czasownik **will**.

Czasownik modalny **shall** jest stosowany we wszelkiego rodzaju formalnych instrukcjach, zawiadomieniach, poleceniach lub regulaminach np.

All candidates shall deliver their ID's, CV's and application forms by October 31st.

The library users shall sign the guest book upon entering the library.

Czasownik modalny **should** może pojawić po niektórych czasownikach lub zwrotach występujących ze spójnikiem **that** (*that clauses*). Do grupy tej należą m.in.

advise, agree, arrange, ask, be anxious, be determined, decide, demand, determine, insist, order, propose, recommend, request, suggest, urge

Dość często są one stosowane w postaci strony biernej jako konstrukcja formalna np.

It is advised that you should have an alarm system installed in your store.

I am determined that my children should receive thorough education.

We insist that the ruined buildings should be pulled down.

I am anxious that you should get the mortgage.

It was suggested that we should stay alert.

Czasownik **should** może wystąpić w konstrukcji:

It is / was + przymiotnik + that ... should

Najczęściej stosowanymi w tym przypadku przymiotnikami są:

advisable, amazing, annoying, desirable, essential, important, natural, necessary, odd, reasonable, strange, surprising
oraz **fair, just, right** jeżeli poprzedza je przysłówka **only** np.

It is essential that we should not allow strangers to gain access to the secret files.

It is natural that you should receive a good pay for the work you've done.

It is important that you should keep record of the vocabulary.

It's annoying that we should be kept waiting for so long.

It is only fair that the winner should be given an award.

Czasownik **should** może pojawić się także po zwrotach typu:

don't know why / don't understand why / can't think why / see no reason why

I don't know why we should pay extra for something we didn't get.

We don't understand why there should be so many obstacles.

I can't think why the motorway should be closed on Sundays.

I see no reason why you should forgive Brian so easily.

Czasownik **should** jest stosowany po spójnikach **in case** oraz **lest** np.

*I've put your shoes inside in case it should rain at night.
Let's have the windows insulated lest the winter should be heavy.*

Aby wyrazić zaskoczenie, zadziwienie lub niemiłą niespodziankę można użyć czasownika **should** po zaimkach **what**, **where** lub **who** np.

*Who should I meet at the party but Adam, the one I hate so much!
Where should I find my wallet but in George's pocket!*

Czasownik **should** może także wystąpić w trybie warunkowym I dla wyrażenia ograniczonego prawdopodobieństwa (⇒ 4.2. str. 122) np.

*If you should see Alan today, tell him I want my money back by tomorrow.
Should there be any problems with the engine, contact us at this number.*

W zdaniach okolicznikowych celu (⇒ 14 str. 229) **should** może być stosowany zamiast czasowników **would** oraz **could** np.

We've opened the shelter so that the homeless should not have to sleep in the streets.

2.10. Will, would - inne zastosowania

Czasownik modalny **will** jest stosowany w uprzejmych pytaniach, stanowiących formę prośby, oferty lub zaproszenia np.

*Will you do me a favour?
Will you visit us next summer?
Will you kindly sign in here, sir?
Will you have some more of the cake?*

Także przy pomocy czasownika **will** można udzielić odpowiedzi na powyższe lub podobne pytania, jednocześnie wyrażając chęć lub gotowość np.

*I will come any time you want me to.
Don't worry. We will lend you some money.
Jack says he will help you repair the roof next Saturday.*

Forma przecząca może wyrażać niechęć lub odmowę wykonania danej czynności np.

We won't agree to your conditions. They're absurd.

I won't listen to the rubbish you're telling.

Steven won't go with us. He's tired.

W podobny sposób można wyrazić trudność z osiągnięciem oczekiwanej rezultatu w odniesieniu do przedmiotów martwych, które nie funkcjonują w sposób, w jaki powinny np.

The engine won't start again. It's killing me.

The splinter won't come out easily.

This knife won't cut. It's blunt.

Chęć wykonania określonej czynności w czasie przeszłym można wyrazić przy użyciu czasownika **would**. Zastosowanie to dotyczy jednak wyłącznie czynności wykonywanych regularnie, nie zaś pojedynczych sytuacji np.

I always asked Jim to lend me his lawnmower and he would.

Sarah would explain maths to me whenever I found it difficult to understand.

W zdaniach przeczących niechęć lub odmowę wykonania określonej czynności w czasie przeszłym można wyrazić przy pomocy **wouldn't**. Zastosowanie to dotyczy zarówno czynności regularnych, jak i pojedynczych np.

Carl wouldn't come to my lectures. He considered them boring.

My leg hurt but the nurse wouldn't give me a painkiller.

W czasie teraźniejszym czasownik **will** może opisywać czynność wykonywaną rutynowo, jako nawyk lub niezmienny stan rzeczy np.

Mark will get up at dawn and go to work in the factory.

Susan will talk about clothes for hours.

The lights will flash all night.

Niekiedy podobne zdania mogą sugerować krytykę lub niezadowolenie z określonego stanu rzeczy np.

The neighbours' children will cry all night. I can hardly sleep.

Your naughty son will pull girls by their hair.

W czasie przeszłym podobne znaczenie można wyrazić przy użyciu czasownika **would**. Zastosowanie to dotyczy wyłącznie czynności wykonywanych regularnie, nie zaś czynności pojedynczych np.

When we were children, our mom would make these delicious cakes.

In secondary school, Paul's friends would call him Mr Bravado.

Ann wouldn't eat vegetables when she was five.

Sam would only talk about his love affairs.

Czasownik **would** podobnie jak czasownik **used to** może opisywać czynności wykonywanie regularnie w przeszłości np.

James would go fishing every Saturday morning.

People would gather in the park and listen to classical music concerts.

Zwykle stosując czasownik **would** w powyższym znaczeniu należy określić czas lub okoliczności np.

Every autumn, we would go to the nearest woods and collect firewood for winter.

Each time they met, they would argue about some small things.

Czasownika **would** nie stosuje się wskazując na zmianę określonego stanu. W zamian należy użyć czasownika **used to** np.

Hank used to be really fat as a child. Now, he is all skin and bones.

Joan used to like going out with me. Now, she says she has no time for me.

Okrabiając dokładny czas wykonania czynności, długość jej trwania lub ile razy została ona powtórzona, nie należy stosować ani **would**, ani **used to**. W takim przypadku należy zastosować właściwy czas przeszły np.

In 1998, Martin travelled across Europe.

He spent two months visiting European capitals.

He liked Paris so much that he went there twice.

Czasownik modalny **will** może wyrażać konkluzję lub pewność w czasie teraźniejszym lub przyszłym w oparciu o domysły, założenia lub fakty np.

'I can't find my stapler.' 'Mark will have it. I saw him taking it from your drawer.'

'Where's David? Have you seen him?' 'It's ten a.m. so he will still be at home.'

Let's not wait for the Parkers. They will be coming late as usual.

Zakładając, że określona czynność została wykonana - zakończona do chwili obecnej można użyć **will + perfect infinitive** np.

*It six p.m. The plane from London will have already landed.
The exam results will have been announced by now. Tom is sure to know them.*

Hipotetyczne przypuszczenie lub pewność dotyczącą czasu przeszłego można wyrazić przy pomocy **would + perfect infinitive**. Zastosowanie to jest charakterystyczne dla trybu warunkowego III (\Rightarrow 4.4. str. 135) np.

*Claire would have been happier if she hadn't married that crass type.
Mr Taylor would have known what to do with a problem of this sort.*

EXERCISE BANK

I. Complete the following sentences using **shall, should, will or would**.

1. ‘..... we go to a pub tonight?’ ‘Great idea! Let’s do it.’
2. When we lived in the country, we go for a walk along the riverside almost everyday.
3. Susan not know what ingredients you need to make a stew. She cannot cook at all.
4. If there be any riots, we’ll deploy the armed forces to restore order.
5. They have closed the store by now. There’s no point in going shopping there.
6. The hooligans never enter the stadium again. We’re going to increase security.
7. ‘..... I carry your suitcases to your room, madam?’ ‘Yes, please.’
8. It’s unbelievable that so many people have been cheated by the unscrupulous faker.
9. ‘That’s bad luck. We’ve run out of petrol.’ ‘What we do now?’
10. If you kindly wait a few seconds, I will be able to confirm your order, sir.
11. I not do everything they expect me to. The others are paid better than I am and still they don’t have to do so much.
12. Ronald can be really boring. He talk about cars for hours on end.
13. I’ve been trying hard to remove the cork from the bottle but it not come out.
14. Don’t cry my dear. You have your Teddy bear. I promise.
15. At the meeting, one representative suggested that the prices of utilities stay at the same level.

16. Isn't it annoying that we be kept waiting for so long?
17. We always organized barbecues on Saturday and invited our neighbours to join us but they not come. They were really strange people.
18. HOSPITAL NOTICE: Visitors leave their clothing in the cloakroom before entering the ward.
19. '..... I water your plants while you're away, Fiona?' 'I'd be grateful if you did.'
20. As you have known, the damage caused by the storm has been tremendous.

II. Complete the following sentences using **shall**, **should**, **will** or **would** and the verbs in the correct form.

1. '..... (you/repeat) what you've just said, please?' 'No problem.'
2. I can't think why I (be) refused the right to vote.
3. For us, it's a matter of life and death. We (fight) till we win or die.
4. When he was four, Eddie (not eat) milk soup. He hated it.
5. 'Somebody's knocking at the door.' 'That (be) the postman. He always comes at about this time.'
6. '..... (I/buy) anything in town, mom?' 'No thanks. I've done the shopping.'
7. 'What's wrong with your car?' 'It (not start) when temperature falls below zero.'
8. My father is determined that I (become) a surgeon, too. But I'm not sure if it is the job I dream of.
9. '..... (you/have) some more coffee, Mr Adams?' 'I'd love to.'
10. Vicky (not tell) you much about herself and her family. She's very secretive.
11. If you (have) any misgivings about the project, Mr Jenkins is ready to explain everything to you.
12. Had the weather been better, your parents (enjoy) this trip much more.
13. It's only fair that the younger kids (not work) so hard as the older volunteers.
14. How about taking a map in case we (get) lost?
15. That dog of yours (bark) at everyone. Why don't you teach him to distinguish strangers from family members?

16. That mugger who hurt your daughter (be) found and put in prison. There's no doubt about it, sir.
17. My grandfather (not have) a say in the house. My grandmother was the one who wore the trousers.
18. ' (I/leave) these forms in the envelope?' 'No. Take them out and put them on my desk.'
19. The operation (end) by now. Let's phone the hospital and ask how Mick is feeling?
20. It's essential that the passengers and their luggage (be) scanned for any dangerous objects before they board the plane.

2.11. Used to - określanie przeszłości

Czasownik modalny **used to** jest stosowany do opisu czynności, która była wykonywana regularnie w przeszłości np.

*Mr Jones used to keep sheep on his farm.
We used to organize family reunions.
Sam didn't used to like mushrooms.
I used to travel a lot.*

Czasownik **used to** może sugerować zmianę określonego stanu rzeczy np.

*We used to live in a cottage; now we live in a semi.
Frankie used to teach history; now he teaches foreign languages.
There used to be a big forest in this place. Now, there is a housing estate there.*

W przypadku, gdy nie ma odniesienia do teraźniejszości, **used to** można zastąpić czasownikiem **would** (⇒ 2.10. str. 98) np.

We used to / would get up at dawn and walk a long way to school. After lessons, we used to / would go to Mr Fleurry's confectionery and used to / would gaze at all those delicious chocolate pralines and other savoury delicacies. We used to / would imagine their exquisite taste and used to / would talk about it all along the way back home.

Należy zwrócić uwagę na fakt, iż ani czasownik **used to**, ani **would**, nie jest stosowany w odniesieniu do czynności pojedynczej.

Czasownik **used to** wykazuje takie same cechy, jak inne czasowniki modalne. Pytania tworzy się poprzez inwersję, a zaprzeczenia przez dodanie **not** np.

Used Jim to play in the local football team?

Used you to be a member of the Greenpeace organization?

People used not to spend so much time at work in the past decades.

There usedn't to be so many homeless in our town.

W języku potocznym o wiele częściej czasownik **used to** przybiera cechy czasownika regularnego, tworząc pytania oraz zaprzeczenia przy użyciu operatora czasu **Past Simple - did** oraz **did not** np.

Did you use to visit each other every Saturday?

Did the factory use to be the biggest one in the country?

Michael didn't use to like cats.

There did not use to be so many car accidents in the past.

Czasami w języku potocznym można natknąć się także na formę **Did ... used to ...? / didn't used to ...**, jednak nie przez wszystkich jest ona uznawana za formę poprawną gramatycznie np.

Did you used to smoke cigarettes?

I didn't used to go to discos so often.

EXERCISE BANK

I. Complete the following sentences using **used to** and the appropriate verbs in the correct form.

charge commute consider depend fear
inhabit invest produce socialize suffer

1. Terry with his workmates but since he got married and his son was born he hasn't spent much time with them after work.
2. ‘..... (Alice) to work?’ ‘Oh, yes. For many years she travelled to work by train.’
3. In his cellar, my great-grandfather wine. My grandfather told me it was the best wine he'd ever drunk.

4. Until the age of seventeen, Françoise on his parents. Then, he moved to Paris and found a job as a painting model.
5. When she was a little girl, Betty spiders and mice.
6. Native Indians this land, but then the white man came and established his colonies.
7. Many of my new mates me their enemy. Now, we get on really well.
8. ‘I (not) from indigestion before.’ ‘I suggest you should see a specialist.’
9. We our money in bonds, but they never brought much profit.
10. You (not) extra for a speedy delivery. Why should I pay extra now?

II. Complete the following sentences using **used to** or **would** or both if possible.

1. Our magazine sell in thousands of copies. Now, the competition is huge and we barely manage to sell one thousand copies a month.
2. Frank be my best friend. We spend a lot of time with each other and we like each other a lot.
3. Before the ground was bulldozed, a wonderful pine forest grow in here.
4. Mr Thornton, our history teacher, give us a lot of homework to do even over the weekend.
5. I remember that my younger brother bite nails, which make my parents very angry.
6. Immigrants from Asia settle in this area. They work hard in the local concrete factory and build their small cottages for the money they earn.
7. In the place where there is the shopping center now, there be a small wooden church built by our ancestors, where we pray every Sunday.
8. Tommy cause us a lot of trouble when he was a small boy.
Today, he is a well-behaved young gentleman.
9. Our father attach great importance to cleanliness in the house.
He make us beat the carpets and dust the furniture almost every day.
10. My life be more exciting colourful when I was a child.
Now, it's nothing but a boring routine.

PROGRESS TEST

Czasowniki modalne - Modal verbs

I. Choose the correct answer or answers.

1. That man you saw in the cinema possibly have been Albert Einstein. He died many years ago.
a) shouldn't b) mightn't c) mustn't d) couldn't
2. You have told me your finger was bleeding. I would have dressed the wound, then.
a) could b) might c) will d) ought to
3. Uncle Barry know what kind of fish it is. He's gone fishing for many years.
a) may b) should c) will d) shall
4. You have misheard the teacher. I'm sure he said Thursday, not Tuesday.
a) will b) can c) must d) may
5. Don't forget you leave your little brother unattended while I am out.
a) mustn't b) shouldn't c) can't d) shan't
6. 'The 704 flight was to have landed an hour ago but it's still in the air.'
'It have been hijacked by terrorists.'
a) ought to b) could c) will d) must
7. 'I've just put the car in the garage.' 'You have done it. I'm driving to town in a moment.'
a) can't b) needn't c) shouldn't d) won't
8. 'Where are Mick and Jerry? I can't find them anywhere.' 'It's half past ten, so they be having their lunch break in the cafeteria.'
a) would b) may c) must d) will
9. You have shouted at Mandy. She's crying now. Apologize to her, Bob.
a) shouldn't b) mustn't c) couldn't d) oughtn't to
10. It's advisable that the toxic waste be disposed of in the safest possible way.
a) may b) would c) should d) shall
11. 'Let's go dancing, we?' 'Sorry. I don't feel like dancing.'
a) would b) need c) shall d) might

12. My brother save money. He spent his every penny on things he didn't need.
a) wouldn't b) mightn't c) couldn't d) oughtn't to
13. 'There have been more of the valuables buried in the backyard.'
'That's quite possible but someone had dug them out before we even realized they were there.'
a) would b) must c) could d) may
14. 'Just look how fast the leader's running.' 'Yeah. The distance between him and the second runner is huge. He be an amateur. I'm sure he is a professional athlete.'
a) won't b) shan't c) mustn't d) can't
15. you please fasten the seatbelts? The plane will be taking off in a moment.
a) Shall b) Might c) Will d) Could
16. I can't think why these houses be so expensive. They are quite old and in poor condition.
a) should b) will c) would d) ought to
17. I sent him the photos by e-mail three days ago. He have seen them by now.
a) can b) ought to c) will d) should
18. I use your printer, please? Mine's out of order.
a) Could b) Shall c) Might d) May
19. Robert like singing as a child. Now, he's a soloist in the church choir.
a) won't b) didn't use to c) shouldn't d) wouldn't
20. 'Where's everybody? Why are the office rooms empty?'
'They be watching the World Cup Final downstairs in the conference room.'
a) might b) should c) will d) could

II. Complete the sentences using the appropriate modal verbs and the main verb in the correct form.

1. need / shall / will + arrive

- a) Julian set off at noon. It's five o'clock now, so he in Dover by now.
- b) We (not) so early. We still have got two hours to go before the shops are open.

- c) What time we ? Will a quarter past two be all right for you?
2. **must / would / could + play**
- a) 'Why didn't you take part in the game last Friday?'
'I (not) because of my knee injury.'
- b) You (not) like that or you will be shown the red card.
- c) Wes and I were the best friends. We together almost every day.
3. **ought to / will / might + tell**
- a) 'How did Sarah find out what we were being up to?' 'Mary her. They are close friends.'
- b) Mark (not) so many lies in court. Now, he's in big trouble.
- c) you me what the book that you're writing is going to be about?
4. **shall / would / should + do**
- a) Michael his duties perfectly. He was the best worker we've ever had.
- b) You what you were supposed to. Your superiors wouldn't have been so annoyed with you, then.
- c) Don't be afraid. These boys (not) any more harm to you now that I am here.
5. **must / need / could + cover**
- a) You (not) me with another blanket. I'm quite warm.
- b) Sorry, sir you the cost of the operation. You don't have a health insurance.
- c) They (not) the distance of five hundred miles in two hours. They travelled by car, not by plane.

III. Rewrite the following sentences using the prompts so the meaning remains the same.

1. Is Brian allowed to spend much time outdoors? (MAY)

.....

2. It was wrong that you spoke to the man so rudely. (SHOULD)

.....

3. I'm certain those black dressed blokes were following you. (MUST)

.....

4. Jack wasn't so nervous in the past. (USE)

.....
5. It's quite likely that somebody took your briefcase by mistake. (COULD)

.....
6. Is it necessary for us to fill in the immigration forms? (NEED)

.....
7. I'm sure it isn't Tessa. (CAN)

.....
8. Would you like me to bring you another glass of wine, sir? (SHALL)

.....
9. We're sure that the enemy didn't know our secret code. (COULD)

.....
10. It was unreasonable of you to cheat on your wife. (OUGHT)

.....
11. I can't start the engine. (WON'T)

.....
12. Perhaps, your employees were dissatisfied with the working conditions. (MAY)

.....
13. Taking photographs inside the museum is forbidden. (MUST)

.....
14. When I knew him, Steven was a very gentle person. (WOULD)

.....
15. Why did you pay my bill? You didn't have to do it. (NEED)

.....
16. I'm sure Mr Wings has already retired. (WILL)

.....
17. Could you swim as well as I can when you were my age? (ABLE)

.....
18. It's Adam's duty to walk the dog. (HAS)

.....
19. It's quite possible that John was sleeping when you phoned him. (COULD)

.....
20. It was wrong that you didn't notify the police of the collision. (SHOULD)

3. Strona bierna - Passive

W języku angielskim stronę bierną tworzy się przy zastosowaniu odpowiedniej odmiany czasownika posiłkowego **be** oraz imiesłowu biernego głównego czasownika. Stronę bierną tworzą czasowniki, które występują w zdaniu z dopełnieniem czyli tzw. czasowniki przechodnie (*transitive verbs*). Wyjątek stanowią czasowniki: **become, get, have, lack, let, resemble, oraz suit**, których nie stosuje się w stronie biernej. Poniższe zestawienie ilustruje formy strony biernej w różnych czasach oraz konstrukcjach gramatycznych.

Present Simple

strona czynna (active)	<i>I write letters.</i>
strona bierna (passive)	<i>Letters are written (by me).</i>

Present Continuous

strona czynna (active)	<i>You are reading an article.</i>
strona bierna (passive)	<i>An article is being read (by you).</i>

Past Simple

strona czynna (active)	<i>Jimmy hired a flat.</i>
strona bierna (passive)	<i>A flat was hired (by Jimmy).</i>

Past Continuous

strona czynna (active)	<i>We were raking the fallen leaves.</i>
strona bierna (passive)	<i>The fallen leaves were being raked (by us).</i>

Present Perfect

strona czynna (active)	<i>Sue has bought a new car.</i>
strona bierna (passive)	<i>A new car has been bought (by Sue).</i>

Present Perfect Continuous (!forma rzadko stosowana)

strona czynna (active)	<i>I have been observing the birds.</i>
strona bierna (passive)	<i>The birds have been being observed (by me).</i>

Past Perfect

strona czynna (active)	<i>They had laid off two hundred workers.</i>
strona bierna (passive)	<i>Two hundred workers had been laid off (by them).</i>

Future Simple

strona czynna (active)	<i>Sarah will clean the house.</i>
strona bierna (passive)	<i>The house will be cleaned (by Sarah).</i>

be going to

strona czynna (active)

Fiona is going to finish the painting.

strona bierna (passive)

The painting is going to be finished (by Fiona).

Future Perfect

strona czynna (active)

Terry will have done the housework.

strona bierna (passive)

The housework will have been done (by Terry).

czasowniki modalne

strona czynna (active)

I can / could repair the watch.

strona bierna (passive)

The watch can / could be repaired (by me).

strona czynna (active)

You may / might lose the money.

strona bierna (passive)

The money may / might be lost (by you).

strona czynna (active)

I should / ought to check the files.

strona bierna (passive)

The files should / ought to be checked (by me).

strona czynna (active)

We must release the news.

strona bierna (passive)

The news must be released (by us).

strona czynna (active)

Joe could / might have missed the bus.

strona bierna (passive)

The bus could / might have been missed (by Joe).

strona czynna (active)

Alan shouldn't / oughtn't to have cancelled the meeting.

strona bierna (passive)

The meeting shouldn't / oughtn't to have been cancelled (by Alan).

konstrukcja bezokolicznikowa

strona czynna (active)

I want you to do the job.

strona bierna (passive)

I want this job to be done (by you).

strona czynna (active)

It seems that Mike lied to us.

strona bierna (passive)

We seem to have been lied to (by Mike).

Gerund / imiesłów czynny

strona czynna (active)

I remember that he asked me out.

strona bierna (passive)

I remember being asked out (by him).

Imiesłów dokonany

strona czynna (active)

She remembered that they had tied her up.

strona bierna (passive)

She remembered having been tied up (by them).

Niektóre czasowniki mogą występować z dwoma dopełnieniami – bliższym i dalszym. W takim przypadku stronę bierną można utworzyć na dwa sposoby np.

- | | |
|----------------------------------|---|
| strona czynna (<i>active</i>) | <i>I gave Joan your book.</i> |
| strona bierna (<i>passive</i>) | <i>Joan was given your book (by me).</i> |
| strona czynna (<i>active</i>) | <i>I gave your book to Joan.</i> |
| strona bierna (<i>passive</i>) | <i>Your book was given to Joan (by me).</i> |

Innymi czasownikami występującymi z dwoma dopełnieniami są:

hand, lend, offer, promise, sell, teach, tell

Można także utworzyć stronę bierną przezehodnych czasowników złożonych (*transitive phrasal verbs*) np.

- | | |
|----------------------------------|--|
| strona czynna (<i>active</i>) | <i>The burglar broke into my house.</i> |
| strona bierna (<i>passive</i>) | <i>My house was broken into (by the burglar).</i> |
| strona czynna (<i>active</i>) | <i>My sister is looking after my baby.</i> |
| strona bierna (<i>passive</i>) | <i>My baby is being looked after (by my sister).</i> |

Czasowniki **catch, hear, find, keep, notice, see, send** oraz **show** mogą być stosowane w konstrukcji:

orzeczenie + dopełnienie + ~ *ing*

Konstrukcja ta posiada formę strony biernej np.

- | | |
|----------------------------------|---|
| strona czynna (<i>active</i>) | <i>They heard the baby crying.</i> |
| strona bierna (<i>passive</i>) | <i>The baby was heard crying.</i> |
| strona czynna (<i>active</i>) | <i>Someone saw the man shoplifting.</i> |
| strona bierna (<i>passive</i>) | <i>The man was seen shoplifting.</i> |

Czasowniki **advise, allow, ask, believe, consider, expect, feel, invite, mean, order, recommend, request, require, teach, tell** oraz **understand** są stosowane w konstrukcji:

orzeczenie + dopełnienie + bezokolicznik (*infinitive*)

Konstrukcja ta posiada formę strony biernej np.

- | | |
|----------------------------------|--|
| strona czynna (<i>active</i>) | <i>They allowed me to use their software.</i> |
| strona bierna (<i>passive</i>) | <i>I was allowed to use their software.</i> |
| strona czynna (<i>active</i>) | <i>They expect their team to win this time.</i> |
| strona bierna (<i>passive</i>) | <i>Their team are expected to win this time.</i> |

Czasowniki (**would**) **like**, (**would**) **love**, **want** oraz **wish** mogą wystąpić w powyższej konstrukcji w stronie biernej np.

- | | |
|-------------------------|---|
| strona czynna (active) | <i>I would like someone to check my accounts.</i> |
| strona bierna (passive) | <i>I would like my accounts to be checked.</i> |
| strona czynna (active) | <i>We wanted someone to answer our questions.</i> |
| strona bierna (passive) | <i>We wanted our questions to be answered.</i> |

Czasowniki **hate**, **like**, **love**, **need**, **prefer**, **want** oraz **wish** mogą także być stosowane w stronie czynnej powyższej konstrukcji bezokolicznikowej, nie posiadają one jednak formy strony biernej np.

- | | |
|------------------------|--|
| strona czynna (active) | <i>We prefer Jenny to stay in bed today.</i> |
| strona czynna (active) | <i>I hate you to say it.</i> |

Czasowniki **appear**, **attempt**, **agree**, **begin**, **come**, **continue**, **hope**, **refuse**, **seem**, **start**, **struggle**, **tend** oraz **try** występują w konstrukcji:

orzeczenie + bezokolicznik (*infinitive*) + dopełnienie

Konstrukcja ta posiada formę strony biernej np.

- | | |
|-------------------------|---|
| strona czynna (active) | <i>People began to buy these dictionaries.</i> |
| strona bierna (passive) | <i>These dictionaries began to be bought (by people).</i> |
| strona czynna (active) | <i>They seem to like Roger.</i> |
| strona bierna (passive) | <i>Roger seems to be liked (by them).</i> |

Jednakże w przypadku czasowników **agree**, **attempt**, **hope**, **refuse**, **struggle** oraz **try** istnieje różnica w znaczeniu wyrażanym w stronie czynnej oraz stronie biernej np.

- | | |
|-------------------------|---|
| strona czynna (active) | <i>We refused to hire Mr Watson.</i> |
| strona bierna (passive) | <i>Mr Watson refused to be hired by us.</i> |
| strona czynna (active) | <i>I hope to meet my old friends.</i> |
| strona bierna (passive) | <i>My old friends hope to be met by me.</i> |

Po czasownikach **advise**, **agree**, **be anxious**, **be determined**, **beg**, **decide**, **demand**, **insist**, **propose**, **recommend**, **suggest** oraz **urge** można zastosować konstrukcję:

that + (should) + strona bierna (passive)

- | | |
|-------------------------|---|
| strona czynna (active) | <i>Our lawyer advised buying the property.</i> |
| strona bierna (passive) | <i>Our lawyer advised that the property (should) be bought.</i> |

- | | |
|-------------------------|--|
| strona czynna (active) | <i>Mick suggested resolving the case at once.</i> |
| strona bierna (passive) | <i>Mick suggested that the case (should) be resolved at once</i> |

Stosując czasowniki **advise**, **decide**, **demand**, **propose**, **recommend** oraz **suggest** powyższą konstrukcję można także zamienić na zdanie z podwójną stroną bierną np.

- | | |
|-------------------------|---|
| strona czynna (active) | <i>Someone recommended disposing of the files.</i> |
| strona bierna (passive) | <i>It was recommended that the files (should) be disposed of.</i> |
| strona czynna (active) | <i>Someone suggested pulling the ruin down.</i> |
| strona bierna (passive) | <i>It was suggested that the ruin (should) be pulled down.</i> |

Konstrukcję w stronie biernej rozpoczynającą się od zaimka **It** można także utworzyć z czasownikami **assume**, **believe**, **claim**, **know**, **say**, **suspect** lub **think** np.

- | | |
|-------------------------|---|
| strona czynna (active) | <i>People say that the painting is faked.</i> |
| strona bierna (passive) | <i>It is said that the painting is faked.</i> |
| strona czynna (active) | <i>They suspect that the car was stolen.</i> |
| strona bierna (passive) | <i>It is suspected that the car was stolen.</i> |

Przy użyciu tych samych czasowników można utworzyć stronę bierną z konstrukcją bezokolicznikową. W takim przypadku podmiotem zdania w stronie biernej jest dopełnienie ze zdania w stronie czynnej np.

- | | |
|-------------------------|---|
| strona czynna (active) | <i>People say that Tom is the culprit.</i> |
| strona bierna (passive) | <i>Tom is said to be the culprit.</i> |
| strona czynna (active) | <i>Everyone knows that these flowers bloom only once.</i> |
| strona bierna (passive) | <i>These flowers are known to bloom only once.</i> |

W tej samej konstrukcji można zastosować podwójną stronę bierną np.

- | | |
|-------------------------|---|
| strona czynna (active) | <i>They believe that someone broke the code.</i> |
| strona bierna (passive) | <i>The code is believed to have been broken.</i> |
| strona czynna (active) | <i>People knew that someone had damaged the statue.</i> |
| strona bierna (passive) | <i>The statue was known to have been damaged.</i> |

Zastosowanie strony biernej.

Stronę bierną w języku angielskim najczęściej stosuje się, gdy wykonawca czynności nie jest znany, nie jest istotny, gdy jest to wykonawca ‘ogólny’ lub bezosobowy tzn. wszyscy, każdy (**people**, **they**, **someone**, **one**, **you**), lub gdy nie ma konieczności wymieniać nazwy wykonawcy czynności ponieważ jest on ogólnie znany.

W takim przypadku w zdaniu w stronie biernej zwykle nie umieszcza się nazwy wykonawcy po przyimku **by** np.

The books have been published recently.

The old wiring is being replaced next week.

It is said that the new law will be introduced soon.

Strona bierna najczęściej pojawia się w języku formalnym, w prasie lub w oficjalnych komunikatach, a także we wszelkiego rodzaju instrukcjach oraz opisach. W takim przypadku najistotniejszą informacją jest sama czynność, a nie jej wykonawca np.

Two valuable paintings have been stolen from the National Museum.

A great number of loaded trucks were stopped at the border.

The red switches must be connected to the main board.

A new observatory is being built in New Mexico.

Niekiedy zastosowanie strony biernej pomaga w uniknięciu zawiłej lub niezrozumiałej konstrukcji zdania. Szczególnie dotyczy to długich wypowiedzi np.

strona czynna (*active*) *Before the presentation, there were some further problems with the software and so we cancelled it.*

strona bierna (*passive*) *Before the presentation, there were some further problems with the software, so the presentation had to be cancelled.*

Strona bierna pomaga także uniknąć cytowania nazwy wykonawcy czynności z uwagi na chęć zachowania tej informacji w tajemnicy lub taktowność wypowiedzi np.

employer to his workers: ‘*I’m sorry to say that twenty more people will be dismissed next month.*’

car mechanic to client: ‘*The gear box wasn’t used in the correct way.*’

Stronę bierną często stosuje się w konstrukcjach ze (1) spójnikiem **that** (*that clauses*) lub z (2) bezokolicznikiem (*infinitive*) w celu przytoczenia wypowiedzi, uwagi, myśli, decyzji itp. pochodzącej od wielu osób lub osób, których nazwisk nie chcemy ujawniać. Konstrukcja taka ma następującą postać:

(1) **It** + strona bierna (*passive*) + **that**
lub

(2) **It** + strona bierna (*passive*) + bezokolicznik (*infinitive*)

Czasowniki stosowane z konstrukcją (1) to m.in.

acknowledge, agree, announce, assume, believe, claim, consider, decide, declare, discover, estimate, expect, feel, find, hope, know, mention, observe, propose, recommend, report, say, see, show, suggest, suppose, think, understand

strona czynna (*active*) *People say that bribery is rife in this country.*

strona bierna (*passive*) *It is said that bribery is rife in this country.*

strona czynna (*active*) *Someone discovered that the banknote was faked*

strona bierna (*passive*) *It was discovered that the banknote was faked.*

Konstrukcją alternatywną dla konstrukcji (1) może być:

podmiot + strona bierna (*passive*) + bezokolicznik (*infinitive*)

strona czynna (*active*) *People suspect that Mr Martin pulls strings.*

strona bierna (*passive*) *Mr Martin is suspected to pull strings.*

strona czynna (*active*) *They expect that the new law will effect changes.*

strona bierna (*passive*) *The new law is expected to effect changes.*

W tej formie nie stosuje się jedynie czasowników: **agree, announce, mention, propose, recommend** oraz **suggest**.

Czasowniki stosowane z konstrukcją (2) to m.in.

agree, decide, expect, hope, plan, propose, tell = order

strona czynna (*active*) *They have planned to open new branches.*

strona bierna (*passive*) *It has been planned to open new branches.*

strona czynna (*active*) *People expect the winter will be mild.*

strona bierna (*passive*) *The winter is expected to be mild.*

strona czynna (*active*) *Someone told me to read the instructions aloud.*

strona bierna (*passive*) *I was told to read the instructions aloud.*

EXERCISE BANK

I. Complete the texts with the verbs in passive in the correct tense form.

1. It (just/announce) that the old warehouses
(transform) into a museum next year. Since the 20's, the warehouses
..... (use) as a storing place for grain and other agricultural produce.

- The warehouses (build) at the beginning of the 19th century and (not renovate) since that time. Recently, it (discover) that their construction is in rather poor condition and a decision (make) that their commercial use (should/forbid).
2. Yesterday morning, the local police (notify) of a bomb that (plant) by an unknown person in one of the office buildings in the city centre. A special squad (call) and the bomb (detect) and (defuse) after three hours of painstaking work. Before the squad arrived, the workers and other civilian people (take) out of the building safely by the police. Fortunately, an explosion (prevent) and nobody (hurt).
3. A great number of oil and watercolour paintings (expose) at the exhibition that is to (open) by the minister of arts himself in the National Gallery tomorrow. The works (paint) mainly by young promising artists from many European countries. A great variety of themes and motives (depict) on the paintings and it (expect) that this unusual variety (appreciate) by visitors the most. It (estimate) that the exhibition (visit) by over ten thousand people before it (close) at the end of September. The best works (select) and prizes (award) by a special committee.
4. Storks (know) to fly away to hot countries before winter comes. However, there are always the cases of those which cannot fly away for a number of reasons. For example, this year the National Institute of Ornithology (inform) of about fifty such cases. Recently, two young storks with broken wings (find) by a farmer from a small village near Warsaw. Probably, the storks (attack) and (cripple) by a predator. They both (take) home and (treat) by a veterinary surgeon. At present, they (take) care of by the farmer's children and there are real hopes that their lives (save).
5. Christmas time is a hard time for Santa Claus. Every year, thousands of letters (write) and (send) to Santa by children from all over the world. In these letters, their wishes and requests (express). Most of them are reasonable but there are also some very unusual or even absurd. For example, in one letter that (deliver) last year a six-year old boy from England asked Santa for a space rocket to (present) to him for Christmas.

In another letter, a girl of twelve from Estonia wrote that a star from the sky must (give) to her or else she would stop believing in Santa. Wasn't that a little blackmail? It is clear that all these requests have to (read) and (sort) carefully by Santa's assistants, which explains why it sometimes takes so long for Christmas presents to (deliver) to our houses.

II. Put the verbs in the correct active or passive tense form.

1. ‘ (we/suppose) to wash the floors and clean all the windows?’
‘Of course not. The floors and the windows (clean) last week, but I would like all the door hinges to (grease).’
2. The kitchen staff were very quick. Before the new group of diners (arrive), the tables in the dining room (wipe) clean and clean crockery (lay).
3. The other day I (come) across Richard in the music store. He (wear) his hand in plaster. When I (ask) him what (happen) he (tell) me he (bite) by his neighbour's dog.
4. ‘Where (you/carry) all these empty cardboard boxes, soldiers?’
‘We (order) to load them onto the truck. Our sergeant says they (collect) by a recycling company this afternoon, so they must (load) by noon.’
5. ‘What's done it's done. Stop crying over spilt milk. It can't (change).’
‘I know, but if only I (warn) about the risk by someone, I (not invest) all my money in the business.’
6. ‘Why (the carpets/ not beat) yet? Haven't I told you that I want everything to (do) before the guests arrive?’
‘I'm sorry. I (start) watching the quiz on TV and it (absorb) me. Can you believe that finally the main prize (win)?’ ‘Really? Who (win) it?’
7. ‘I wonder what (happen) to my red dress? It (disappear).’
‘It could (eat) by clothes moths.’
‘Are you kidding? I (wear) it at the party last month.’
8. ‘Madam, do you remember (ask) for money by these two men?’
‘Oh yes. I (stop) by them while I (walk) in the street this morning, and I (give) them a pound or two.’

9. ‘What (make) you hand in your resignation?’
‘I (not pay) enough for the hard work I (do)
since I (give) this job.’
10. ‘How long (you/treat) in hospital, sir?’
‘I (stay) here since April 17th when the accident
..... (occur).’
‘And who (it/cause) by? You or the other driver?’

III. Rewrite the following sentences using the passive form so the meaning remains the same.

1. Everybody knows that Mr Hubbard has been offered bribes on many occasions.
Mr Hubbard
2. They shouldn’t have revealed the information before the official publication.
The information
3. It seems that the tanker was hit by a torpedo.
The tanker
4. We will offer Simon a higher salary.
Simon
5. They would like me to cover the cost of the operation.
They would like the cost of the operation
6. I am anxious that you should settle the matter as soon as possible.
I am anxious that the matter
7. They consider you to be their greatest adversary.
You
8. Somebody may have discovered that the invoices were not signed by you.
It
9. I’m sure it was Ronald who left the computer on.
The computer must
10. Where the ancient treasure was buried is still unknown.
The ancient treasure yet.
11. I don’t believe a UFO abducted you.
You can’t
12. Who has recovered the missing files?
Who by?
13. They claimed they had finally found the wreck of the ship.
The wreck of the ship

14. Everybody believes that an unknown artist painted the portrait.
The portrait
15. They told me that I should keep guard the whole night.
I

IV. Complete the conversation with the verbs in the correct active or passive tense form.

- Reporter: 'Mr Sykes, is it the first time you (make) redundant?'
- Mr Sykes: 'No, not the first time. I (change) my jobs a few times before.'
- Reporter: '..... (you/give) any warning or any hint before the notice of dismissal (hand) in to you?'
- Mr Sykes: 'I don't remember (approach) by anyone before it all (happen).'
- Reporter: 'So by this day you (not inform) about the reason for your dismissal. Is that true?'
- Mr Sykes: 'It is true. And I (not pay) the severance that I (promise) by the director himself yet.'
- Reporter: '..... (you/find) a new job yet?'
- Mr Sykes: 'Well, I (invited) for an interview by the rival company and I (decide) to take the opportunity.'
- Reporter: 'When (you/know) whether you (give) the job or not?'
- Mr Sykes: 'Right after the interview I (tell) whether I (accept) for the job or not.'
- Reporter: 'And what (you/do) if you (not give) the employment?'
- Mr Sykes: 'I (keep) waiting until I (offer) another job by someone.'
- Reporter: 'I see. Thank you very much, Mr Sykes and good luck.'

4. Tryby warunkowe - Conditionals

Typowe zdanie warunkowe rozpoczyna się od spójnika **If**.

W języku angielskim rozróżnia się cztery podstawowe typy trybów warunkowych np.

Tryb 0 *If you breath in the air, your lungs expand.*

Tryb 1 *If they don't get subsidies, their business will go bankrupt.*

Tryb 2 *If there were more time, I could tell you some more stories.*

Tryb 3 *If you had been driving more slowly, you wouldn't have caused the crash.*

Zdanie główne stanowi odpowiedź na warunek postawiony w zdaniu warunkowym.

Opisuje ono jak zmieni lub zmieniłaby się określona sytuacja, gdyby warunek został spełniony. Kolejność zdań jest dowolna, jednakże rozpoczynając wypowiedź od zdania warunkowego **if**, należy pamiętać o przecinku przed zdaniem głównym. Zasada ta nie obowiązuje jeżeli wypowiedź rozpoczyna się od zdania głównego np.

If it starts raining, we will get wet.

We will get wet if it starts raining.

4.1. Tryb warunkowy 0 - Conditional 0

Tryb typu 0 nie jest typowym trybem warunkowym. Opisuje on ogólnie obowiązujące prawidła oraz uniwersalne zasady natury lub zachowania. Tryb 0 najczęściej stosowany jest w naukowych lub technicznych objaśnieniach lub wyrażeniach opisujących obowiązujące zasady. W tym przypadku znaczenie spójnika **if** porównywalne jest do znaczenia zaimka **when** lub **whenever**. W obydwu zdaniach tego trybu warunkowego występuje ta sama forma czasowa: **Present Simple** np.

If you heat water to 100 degrees, it boils.

If you eat too much, you put on weight quickly.

If you touch the leaves, the flower starts to fade.

If you don't comply with the regulations, you are fired.

If you have problems with your teeth, you go to a dentist.

Podobną wypowiedź można odnieść do czasu przeszłego stosując **Past Simple** np.

If you threw a stick, the dog fetched it.

If it rained hard, the people stayed in their huts.

If you mentioned Gina's name, Peter went red all over his face.

EXERCISE BANK

I. Write answers to the following questions using the appropriate phrases in Type 0 Conditional.

- | | |
|--------------------------------------|---------------------------|
| a. wear glasses | f. the police arrest them |
| b. have to pay a fine | g. explode |
| c. the tyres squeal | h. sneeze and cough |
| d. cry | i. fish die |
| e. suffer from hangover the next day | j. boil over |

1. What happens if there is no air in the lake water?

.....

2. What happens if you brake hard?

.....

3. What happens if someone is caught shoplifting?

.....

4. What happens if you drink too much alcohol?

.....

5. What happens if you get caught trespassing?

.....

6. What happens if you pull the pin out of the grenade?

.....

7. What happens if you don't see well?

.....

8. What happens if you cook milk for too long?

.....

9. What happens if you cut onion?

.....

10. What happens if you catch a cold?

.....

4.2. Tryb warunkowy I - Conditional I

Tryb warunkowy I stosowany jest w odniesieniu do czasu teraźniejszego lub przyszłego. Warunek wyrażony w tym trybie ma charakter warunku realnego - możliwego do spełnienia. Zwykle tryb ten jest stosowany jeżeli prawdopodobieństwo spełnienia określonego warunku jest duże.

Stopień prawdopodobieństwa wyrażonego w trybie warunkowym typu I zazwyczaj opiera się na faktach lub na domniemaniu osoby wyrażającej taki warunek.

Typowe zdanie w trybie warunkowym typu I ma następującą strukturę gramatyczną:

If + Present Simple, Future Simple

zdanie warunkowe zdanie główne

If Joan gets up too late, she will miss her bus.

If Mr Roberts resigns, Ms Abercrombie will take his place.

If the bank don't give us a loan, we will not finish building the house.

Kolejność zdań może być odwrotna, należy jednak pamiętać o przecinku oddzielającym obydwa człony jeżeli wypowiedź rozpoczyna się od zdania warunkowego np.

If you don't score more points, you will not win the game.

Adam will be angry if you drive his car without his permission.

There will be further riots if the government don't change their policy.

W zdaniu głównym zamiast czasu **Future Simple** można zastosować inne formy gramatyczne:

- (1) czasowniki modalne **may** / **might** - dla wyrażenia przypuszczenia np.

If we miss the train, we may have to wait for another for a few hours.

Frank might be fired if the management get to know about his legal problems.

- (2) czasowniki modalne **may** / **can** - dla wyrażenia pozwolenia np.

If you prove your innocence, you may be released immediately.

You can play in our garden if you promise not to make a big mess.

- (3) czasowniki modalne **should** / **must** / **could** - dla wyrażenia rady, polecenia, prośby itp. np.

If you don't feel well, you should see your doctor.

Trevor must learn more if he hopes to pass his examinations.

If the weather improves, could we borrow the yacht and sail in the lake?

- (4) **be going to** - dla wyrażenia ewentualnego skutku, jaki nastąpi w przypadku spełnienia warunku np.

If we don't score a goal, we're going to lose the game.

W zdaniu warunkowym zamiast czasu **Present Simple** można także zastosować inne formy gramatyczne:

- (1) czas **Present Continuous** - dla podkreślenia czynności trwającej w danej chwili lub planu odnoszącego się do przyszłości np.

If they are walking through the forest, they will certainly lose their way.

If you are leaving before noon, we may not see each other.

- (2) **be going to** - dla wyrażenia zamiaru np.

If Harry is going to do the cooking, we will have to wait for our meals for hours.

If you're going to take the main road, you will get stuck in a traffic jam.

- (3) czas **Present Perfect (Continuous)** - dla podkreślenia czynności dokonanej lub wykonywanej od przeszłości np.

If you have done what I've asked you to, you may go home.

If he has lived / has been living here for so long, he should know his neighbours well.

- (4) czasowniki modalne - **will** / **would** - dla wyrażenia uprzejmiej prośby np.

If you will spare a pound or two, our charity will be grateful.

If you would wait a moment, I will bring you the menu, madam.

- (5) czasownik modalny **will** / **won't** - dla wyrażenia chęci lub jej braku np.

If Mr Henderson will offer his help during the negotiations, I will feel safer.

Our team will break up if our sponsors will not support us financially next year.

- (6) czasownik modalny **will** - dla wyrażenia czynności wykonywanej z uporem np.

If he will tell lies, he will never find true friends.

If you will criticize everybody, they will stop liking you.

- (7) konstrukcja **would like** / **love** / **care** - dla wyrażenia chęci lub zaproszenia np.

If you would like to try my cheesecake, I will brink you a piece.

If you'd care to go sightseeing, we can show you round.

- (8) czasownik modalny **should** - dla wyrażenia ograniczonego prawdopodobieństwa spełnienia warunku np.

If you should find my wallet, let me know, please.

If there should be any more disturbances, the armed forces will be deployed.

Możliwe jest także umieszczenie czasownika **should** na początku zdania oraz pominięcie spójnika **if**. Konstrukcja taka ma charakter formalny i jest stosowana najczęściej we wszelkiego rodzaju poleceńach, instrukcjach itp. np.

Should you have any problems with installing the receiver, contact your local dealer.

Should there be any interferences, don't try repairing the device on your own.

Znaczenie ograniczonego prawdopodobieństwa można także wyrazić stosując czasownik (**should**) **happen to** lub zwrot **by any / some remote / some unlucky chance** np.

If you happen to meet that girl again, don't hesitate to ask her out.

If you should happen to be in Amsterdam, drop in for a cup of coffee.

If by some unlucky chance your radio breaks down, I will lend you one of my own.

Zamiast spójnika **if**, w zdaniu warunkowym typu I można zastosować spójnik **unless**. Zastępuje on zdanie warunkowe przeczące **if not**. Należy pamiętać, że po spójniku **unless** zdanie ma postać twierdzenia np.

If you don't tell the truth ... = Unless you tell the truth ...

If they don't pay me more ... = Unless they pay me more ...

Unless you tell the truth, you will be punished.

I won't work for them unless they pay me more.

Spójnik **if** może wystąpić razem z przysłówkiem **only**, opisując życzenie, nadzieję, żal itp. np.

If only Mark asks me out, I will be the happiest person on earth.

If only the both sides reach agreement, there will be peace again.

Po **if only** można także zastosować czasownik modalny **would**, wyrażając tym samym żal lub niewielką nadzieję na zmianę określonego stanu lub sytuacji. Zdanie takie odnosi się do teraźniejszości np.

If only my husband would tell me that he loves me more often.

If only you would not bring us so much trouble.

Ewentualny skutek niespełnienia określonego warunku można wyrazić stosując spójnik **or else** lub jego formalny odpowiednik **otherwise**. Konstrukcja taka dość często występuje ze zdaniem w trybie rozkazującym np.

If we don't come early enough, we won't get tickets. =

We must come early enough or else / otherwise we won't get tickets.

If you don't apologize for your misbehaviour, I will make you stay at home. =

Apologize for your misbehaviour or else / otherwise I will make you stay at home.

Warunek w czasie teraźniejszym można także wyrazić przy użyciu spójnika **provided (that)** = **on condition that** np.

Provided we get a satisfying discount, we will buy more of the recorders.

I will let you use my phone provided you pay for the calls you make.

Pytanie o charakterze warunku można wyrazić przy użyciu spójników **suppose** / **supposing** = **what (will happen) if ... ?** np.

What will happen if I forget to do my homework? =

Suppose I forget to do my homework?

What if the storm doesn't subside? =

Supposing the storm doesn't subside?

Niekiedy spójnik **if** może wyrażać znaczenie podobne do **as** lub **since**. W takim przypadku w zdaniu z **if** można zastosować dowolne konstrukcje czasowe, ponieważ zdanie takie nie ma charakteru zdania warunkowego np.

If you know what I mean, why don't you admit that I am right?

If he was sure the package wasn't for him, he shouldn't have taken it.

W języku potocznym spójnik **if** można pominąć, stosując jednocześnie zdanie w trybie rozkazującym np.

If you wait a moment, I will bring you the brochures. =

Wait a moment, and I will bring you the brochures.

Po spójniku **if** można także użyć przymiotnik, pomijając czasownik **be** oraz podmiot w zdaniu warunkowym np.

If (you are) exhausted, lie down and relax.

If (it is) necessary, I will pay the whole sum in advance.

EXERCISE BANK

I. Write Type I Conditional sentences using the information below.

- | | |
|--|--|
| a. may be punished for insubordination | f. may get worse |
| b. the war might start anew | g. the alarm will go off |
| c. will be able to provide for my family | h. more rooftops might be destroyed |
| d. will go extinct | i. more of the medicine will be needed |
| e. will not build a house | j. should consult an adviser |

1. Frank may refuse to go to hospital.

If Frank

2. I may find employment soon.

If I

3. Susan may not know how to invest her money.

If Susan

4. We may not be granted a mortgage.

If

5. The private may refuse to carry out the captain's order.

If the private

6. This heavy wind may not stop blowing.

Unless

7. People may not stop hunting the endangered species.

If people

8. There may be a flu epidemic.

Should

9. The peace talks may turn out to be a failure.

If the peace talks

10. You may not enter the correct password.

Unless

II. Complete the following conditional sentences with the correct words.

**care chance happen only should (x2)
unless will (x2) won't would**

1. Your neighbours will keep complaining if you play loud music at night.
2. If there be more such warm-hearted and caring people like you in this world.
3. If you to meet Darren, tell him that I am still waiting for his promise to be fulfilled.
4. I will check if we have any free tickets for the performance if you wait a few minutes, sir.
5. If Mike lend a helping hand with the cleaning, we will never invite him to our party again.
6. We can send you a copy of our financial statement if you would to have a look at it.
7. If you don't want to lose Linda, you propose to her.
8. If by any the older boys bully you again, just let me know and I will tan their hide.
9. What am I to do if I have further problems with the software?
10. We won't stay long at the seaside the good weather keeps.

III. Rewrite the following sentences in Type I Conditional.

1. If there is another power cut, unplug all the electrical devices.
Should
2. If by any chance you lose your way in the mountains, call for help. (HAPPEN)
.....
3. No wonder it smells in the room if they keep smoking cigarettes here. (WILL)
.....
4. You may play in the garden if you don't destroy my flowerbed.
Provided
5. If the fans don't stop fighting, the game will not be resumed.
Unless
6. If David refuses to change his mind, he may lose the chance. (WON'T)
.....
7. What if the alarm clock doesn't go off?

- Suppose
8. If you don't stop sneering at me, I will not talk to you again. (OTHERWISE)
.....
9. If you happen to find my contact lens, store it in this liquid. (SHOULD)
If
10. Should the headphones go wrong, we'll exchange them for new ones. (CHANCE)
If
11. If you cheat again, we won't play cards with you any more.
Cheat
12. Your wounds will not heal if you don't apply this ointment regularly. (ELSE)
.....
13. Tom has passed his final exams, so he must be very happy.
If
14. I wish my father would not be so strict. (ONLY)
.....
15. Please, hang on a second and I will put you through. (WILL)
If

4.3. Tryb warunkowy II - Conditional II

Tryb warunkowy typu II odnosi się do czasu teraźniejszego lub przyszłego. Warunek wyrażony w tym trybie ma charakter warunku nierealnego. Oznacza to, iż możliwość spełnienia takiego warunku co prawda istnieje, lecz jest ona dość odległa lub pozostaje jedynie w sferze przypuszczenia. Zwykle tryb warunkowy typu II stosowany jest w celu wyrażenia hipotezy jak zmieniłaby się określona sytuacja, gdyby taka zmiana była w ogóle możliwa. Zdanie takie sugeruje jednak niewielką nadzieję na zmianę sytuacji. Typowe zdanie w trybie warunkowym typu II ma następującą strukturę:

If + Past Simple, would + niepełny bezokolicznik (*bare infinitive*)

zdanie warunkowe zdanie główne

If I knew how to repair the oven, I would do it.

If you saved money, you would be able to buy anything you wanted.

If Michael didn't have problems with maths, he wouldn't have to take extra lessons.

Czasownik **be** w zdaniu warunkowym typu II może przybrać formę regularnej odmiany w czasie **Past Simple**, lub też wystąpić w postaci **were** po każdej osobie liczby pojedynczej i mnogiej np.

If I was / were you, I wouldn't trust this man.

If Alan was / were with us now, he would know what to do.

If we were not so busy, we would help you with the removal.

If there were more volunteers, we would be able to distribute more of the free meals.

Kolejność zdań może być odwrotna, należy jednak pamiętać o przecinku oddzielającym obydwa człony, jeżeli wypowiedź rozpoczyna się od zdania warunkowego np.

If I had more time, I would write letters to my friends more often.

Joan wouldn't have to get up so early if she didn't travel to work so long.

W zdaniu głównym zamiast czasownika **would** można zastosować inne formy gramatyczne np.

(1) czasowniki modalne **might** / **could** - dla wyrażenia przypuszczenia np.

If you didn't use unleaded petrol, the engine might break down.

They could get into trouble if they cheated at the exam.

(2) czasownik modalny **could** - dla wyrażenia pozwolenia np.

If you had a valid passport, you could pass the border.

We could use the facilities if we stayed in the hotel.

(3) **would** / **might** / **could** + **be** + ~**ing** - dla wyrażenia czynności trwającej np.

If we had a day off, we would be going on a picnic.

Janet could be singing in the concert if she didn't have a sore throat.

W zdaniu warunkowym zamiast czasu **Past Simple** można zastosować inne formy gramatyczne np.

(1) czas **Past Continuous** - dla wyrażenia czynności ciągłej lub planu odnoszącego się do przeszłości np.

If Mike was travelling by plane, he might arrive in Chicago earlier.

We would hear some music play if the concert was still going on.

(2) **be going to** - dla wyrażenia zamiaru np.

If Adam was going to sell his house, he would advertize it in the newspaper.

I would be the first to know if Sue and Dave were going to get married.

(3) czasownik modalny **would** - dla wyrażenia uprzejmiej prośby np.

If you would tell me your name, I would be able to confirm your booking, sir.

If you would phone me again in a few minutes, I'd be grateful.

(4) czasownik modalny **would / wouldn't** - dla wyrażenia chcę lub jej braku np.

If Lisa would agree to date me, I'd be the happiest person on earth.

If Carl wouldn't help you again, I would talk to him.

(5) **was / were** + bezokolicznik (*infinitive*) – dla wyrażenia przypuszczenia lub ograniczonego prawdopodobieństwa spełnienia warunku np.

If I was / were to give up this job, I'd have to start looking for a new one now.

If the conditions were to change, we would be informed in advance.

W konstrukcji takiej można zastosować inwersję, opuszczając spójnik **if**. Zdanie takie ma wydźwięk formalny np.

Was / Were I to give up this job, I'd have to start looking for a new one now.

Were the conditions to change, we would be informed in advance.

Podobne znaczenie można wyrazić, stosując zwrot **by any / some remote / some unlucky chance** np.

If by any chance I gave up my job, I'd have to start looking for a new one now.

If by some remote chance the conditions changed, we would be informed in advance.

(6) konstrukcja **If I + was / were + you, would** - dla wyrażenia rady, sugestii itp. np.

If I was / were you, I would wait before taking my final decision.

Podobne znaczenie można wyrazić stosując:

If I was / were in your place, I wouldn't lend Tom any more money.

If I was / were in your shoes, I would complain to the restaurant manager.

Opuszczając spójnik **if**, można zastosować inwersję. Należy jednak pamiętać, iż w tej formie nie stosuje się czasownika **was**, a jedynie **were** np.

Were I you I would wait before taking my final decision.

Were I in your place I wouldn't lend Tom any more money.

Were I in your shoes I would complain to the restaurant manager.

(7) Konstrukcja **If it were not for** - w celu wyrażenia znaczenia - 'gdyby nie' np.

If it weren't for your support, we wouldn't prosper.

If it weren't for Elisabeth, we wouldn't know what to do.

Możliwa jest także inwersja np.

Were it not for your support, we wouldn't prosper

Were it not for Elisabeth, we wouldn't know what to do.

(8) **But for = If it were not for** np

But for your support, we wouldn't prosper.

But for Elisabeth we wouldn't know what to do.

(9) Spójnik **If only + Past Simple / would** - dla wyrażenia życzenia, żalu, nadzieję itp. np.

If only I were taller, I could work in the police.

If only Sam would help me more in the house.

Stosując spójnik **or (else)** lub jego formalny odpowiednik **otherwise** można opisać, jak zmieniłaby się dana sytuacja, gdyby zaistniały inne okoliczności np.

We are lucky to have you; otherwise we wouldn't manage on our own.

The couple rent rooms to students or else they would have nothing to live on.

Pytanie o charakterze warunku można wyrazić przy użyciu spójników **suppose / supposing = what (would happen) if ... ?** np.

What would happen if we forgot to pay the bills? =

Suppose we forgot to pay the bills?

What if Chris didn't love you any more? =

Suppose Chris didn't love you any more?

Niekiedy spójnik **if** może wyrażać znaczenie zbliżone do **as** lub **since**. Wówczas w zdaniu z **if** można zastosować dowolne formy czasowe, ponieważ zdanie takie nie ma charakteru zdania warunkowego np.

If Ron was fired last month, what is he still doing here?

If you and Alice had been together for so long, why didn't you get married?

If you knew you were traveling in the wrong way, you should have gone back.

EXERCISE BANK

I. Write Type II Conditional sentences using the information below.

- | | |
|-------------------------------|---|
| a. might object strongly | f. could set up a private company |
| b. would taste much better | g. might catch a big marlin |
| c. could make a good analyst | h. could furnish it the way we liked it |
| d. would keep livestock | i. would get better marks |
| e. would be more light inside | j. would be much more useful |

1. Edward has no capital.

If

2. The Nortons don't have a farm.

If

3. Jenny makes mistakes in writing.

If

4. The juice is too bitter.

If

5. This flat doesn't belong to us.

If

6. Our parents don't know about the party.

If

7. The dictionary doesn't contain many entries.

If

8. The trees grow right in front of our house.

If

9. Jack cannot think fast.

If

10. I'm not going deep-sea fishing this time.

If

II. Complete the following conditional sentences with the correct words.

but by for only shoes suppose were (x2) would (x2)

1. If I in your place, I would consult a throat specialist.
2. The company would not be in such good condition if it weren't the government subsidies.
3. If my shoes weren't so soaked, I could walk faster.
4. you mind if I smoked in the compartment?
5. we to open another branch, we would need more staff.
6. Thank you very much, Sam. for you, all our effort would be in vain.
7. Jamie said she didn't love you any more. What would you do then?
8. If some unlucky chance you were bitten by a snake, you'd need an immediate serum injection.
9. Were I in the team coach's, I would not let the goalkeeper play with a broken hand.
10. You wouldn't make a good manager if you not listen to your subordinates' opinions.

III. Rewrite the following sentences in Type II Conditional.

1. He's not a happy man as he hasn't got anyone to rely on.
If
2. If I were to coach the national team, I would need at least two assistants.
Were
3. It is possible that you would cause quite a stir if you spread the gossip. (MIGHT)
You
4. We can't dive deep because we don't have oxygen bottles. (ONLY)
.....
5. If by any chance I changed my mind, I would let you know first. (TO)
If I
6. What if the mobile phone didn't function properly?
Suppose
7. We're not able to solve the case; we just don't have enough evidence.
If
8. If I were you, I wouldn't dye my hair black. (PLACE)

- If
9. Could you please re-write your curriculum vitae, sir? (WOULD)
If
10. But for Christina's assistance, we wouldn't make such fast progress.
If it
11. Could I eat some roast meat if my stomach was perfectly all right? (ALLOWED)
.....
12. What would you do if they refused to co-operate with you? (WOULDN'T)
.....
13. If we didn't have you, we wouldn't know in which direction to go.
But
14. If water got inside the camera, it might break down. (ANY CHANCE)
.....
15. If it were not for our sponsors' money, our association would not exist.
Were

4.4. Tryb warunkowy III - Conditional III

Tryb warunkowy typu III odnosi się do czasu przeszłego. Warunek wyrażony w tym trybie ma charakter jedynie hipotetyczny, ponieważ nie istnieje możliwość spełnienia takiego warunku. Typowe zdanie w trybie warunkowym typu III ma następującą strukturę:

If + Past Perfect, would + have done (perfect infinitive)
zdanie warunkowe zdanie główne

If you had told me about your problems, I would have helped you.

If they hadn't made such a mess, their father wouldn't have been so angry.

If I had managed the money better, my company would not have gone bankrupt.

Kolejność zdań może być odwrotna, należy jednak pamiętać o przecinku oddzielającym obydwa człony jeżeli wypowiedź rozpoczyna się od zdania warunkowego np.

If you had taken my advice, you wouldn't have made such a big mistake.

That man wouldn't have died if the rescue had arrived earlier.

W zdaniu głównym zamiast czasownika **would** można zastosować inne formy gramatyczne:

- (1) czasowniki modalne **could / might + perfect infinitive** - dla wyrażenia przypuszczenia, pozwolenia, możliwości, zdolności itp. np.

If he hadn't been taken out of the icy water, he might have died of hypothermia.

Celine could have taken a few days off if she had asked her boss for them.

Paul could have written the script if he had been given more time.

- (2) **would + have been doing** - dla wyrażenia czynności trwającej np.

We wouldn't have been driving so fast if we hadn't been in a hurry.

If I had had my pen, I would have been taking notes.

- (3) **would + niepełny bezokolicznik (bare infinitive)** - jest to połączenie trybu warunkowego typu III z trybem warunkowym typu II. Kombinacja taka jest możliwa jeżeli opisuje w czasie teraźniejszym hipotetyczny rezultat warunku, który nie został spełniony w przeszłości np.

If I had crossed 6 instead of 5, I would be a millionaire now.

If you hadn't dropped out of school, you wouldn't have problems with finding a job.

W zdaniu warunkowym zamiast czasu **Past Perfect** można zastosować inne formy gramatyczne:

- (1) czas **Past Perfect Continuous** - dla wyrażenia czynności trwającej np.

If you hadn't been talking so fast, we wouldn't have had problems understanding you.

I wouldn't have got wet through if I hadn't been walking in the rain.

- (2) konstrukcja **was / were to + have done (perfect infinitive)** - dla wyrażenia ograniczonego prawdopodobieństwa lub możliwości np.

If we were to have slept in tents, we'd have taken our sleeping bags.

If Sam was to have got married, we'd all have been really happy.

- (3) opuszczając spójnik **if** można zastosować inwersję. Jest to konstrukcja o charakterze formalnym np.

If there had been any complaints, we'd have had to deal with them. =

Had there been any complaints, we'd have had to deal with them.

If the resolution had been accepted, there might have been riots. =

Had the resolution been accepted, there might have been riots.

(4) konstrukcja **If it hadn't been for** – wyraża znaczenie ‘gdyby nie ...’ np.

If it hadn't been for your support, our plans would have turned into a failure.

If it hadn't been for Sally, I wouldn't have found enough courage in myself.

W konstrukcji tej można także zastosować inwersję np.

Hadn't it been for my friends, I'd have never got out of trouble.

Had it not been for many people's involvement, the charity idea would have collapsed.

(5) **But for = If it hadn't been for** np.

But for my older sister, I wouldn't have become a doctor.

I lost all my money. But for that, we would have gone on holiday to Greece.

EXERCISE BANK

I. Write Type III Conditional sentences using the information below.

1. Janet didn't leave a message for me. I didn't know what time we were going.
If
2. I didn't pass the exam because the questions were too difficult.
If
3. The pilots were worrying because one of the engines wasn't working well.
If
4. The glasses got broken because you didn't handle them with care.
If
5. Eddie didn't have a valid passport and so he couldn't pass the border.
If
6. I didn't lend Ann any money because I didn't have any on me.
If
7. The flight trajectory wasn't well calculated and so the probe missed its destination.
If
8. I wasn't able to pick up the phone because I was taking a shower.
If
9. The judge dismissed the case as there wasn't enough evidence.
If
10. The committee disqualified the Czech competitor for taking drugs.
If

II. Rewrite the sentences in Type III Conditional using the prompts so the meaning remains the same.

1. The explosion occurred because the gas installation was leaky.

Hadn't

2. You wasted the last box of matches and now we can't make a bonfire.

If

3. If the minister had listened to his advisors, he wouldn't have made such mistakes.

Had

4. Collin helped us a lot in designing the project.

But

5. We didn't explore the cave because we didn't have our specialist equipment.

If we were to

6. Possibly, Jason would have suffered from injuries if he had been inside the burning house.

Jason might

7. But for the other driver's quick reaction, the cars would have collided.

If it

8. Steven hasn't revised for the exam and he cannot answers the questions.

If

9. I didn't understand much of the film because the people in front of us were talking aloud all the time.

I

10. Without your great involvement, the whole venture would have been a failure.

Hadn't it

PROGRESS TEST
Tryby warunkowe - Conditionals

I. Choose the correct answer or answers.

1. If it weren't for his laziness, Rick much better marks at school.

- a) might get b) could have got c) will get d) would get

2. Unless you me alone, I will call the police.

- a) didn't leave b) left c) leave d) would leave

3. If you me the whole truth, I promise not to punish you.

- a) told b) will tell c) had told d) tell
4. If they had complied with the safety regulations, they from such serious injuries.
a) would not be suffering b) might not have suffered
c) hadn't suffered d) wouldn't have suffered
5. Would you mind if I the seat by the window?
a) would take b) took c) had been taking d) take
6. But for the firemen's bravery and dedication, there many more victims of the fire in the discotheque.
a) might have been b) would be c) could be d) would have been
7. If you your name, I would be able to check your flight reservation.
a) will repeat b) repeated c) had repeated d) would repeat
8. If we the binoculars, we could admire the views.
a) would take b) took c) take d) had taken
9. We the flares if we should find ourselves in danger.
a) would fire b) fired c) will fire d) would have fired
10. The politicians will come out and talk to the protesters provided that they throwing rotten eggs and tomatoes at them.
a) would stop b) stopped c) will stop d) stop

II. Complete the sentences with the correct words.

**else for (x2) had happen if should
suppose unless were (x3) will would (x2)**

1. it not for Cindy, I wouldn't cope with running the house.
2. If the boiler break down again, don't try repairing it on your own.
3. If you mind my children tonight, I'll be immensely grateful.
4. the batteries run down, what will you do, then? Have you got any spare ones?
5. But the passer-by, the child would have drowned.
6. If you should to visit our town next month, don't hesitate to drop in for a cup of coffee.
7. If only Tom spend more time with the children. He's never at home.
8. I can't think what would have happened if it hadn't been our guide's presence of mind.

9. the bills are settled in time, your account will be debited with extra interest.
10. What the terrain isn't drained soon? Will there be more landslides like this?
11. If we to stay longer in the mountains, we'd need more food and water supplies.
12. Henry not be suffering from sunburn if he hadn't been lying in the scorching sun for so long.
13. it not been for aunt Sarah's practical advice, all my effort would have been futile.
14. Start reading the trilogy from part one or you will not know what the whole thing is about.
15. I in your place, I would hire one flat and share the costs.

III. Put the verbs in the correct form.

1. I'm heartbroken. My dear Wendy has left me. If only I (tell) her that I loved her more often, she (still/be) with me.
2. It's been hailing for a quarter now. If it (not stop), all our crops (be) lost.
3. I'm broke at the moment but, hypothetically, if I (offer) you ten thousand, (you/sell) your car to me?
4. I don't remember Adam's phone number. If I (have) my notebook, I (tell) it to you.
5. I know the soup tasted strange. If I (add) some spices in it, it (taste) better. I simply forgot about spices.
6. Because of Mr Hick's rash decision our company has lost a good deal of money. If he (not consult) his next decision with us, we (have to) fire him.
7. 'Are you enjoying yourself, Barry?' 'So, so. Perhaps, I (enjoy) the party more if I (know) the people.'
8. I have done what I could to mollify Agnes but it was for nothing. She (not forgive) me even if I (bring) her a thousand red roses.
9. 'What (you/tell) Alan if he (discover) you are paying with his credit card?' 'This isn't Alan's credit card. It's mine.'
10. Charles is too shy. If he (take) a course in techniques of assertiveness, he (learn) how to sell products more effectively.

11. If it (not be) for the blizzard, we (set) off much earlier. Now, we have a three-hour delay.
12. If a big asteroid (hit) the earth one day, all life on the planet (be) in grave danger.
13. But for his knee injury, Ronald (play) in the final game last year. Unfortunately, he could only watch it on TV.
14. Suppose your mother (find) out you're playing truant. How (you/explain) that to her?
15. 'Your eyesight (might/improve) if you (eat) more carrot.' 'But I hate carrot, you know.'

IV. Rewrite the following sentences using the prompts so the meaning remains the same.

1. Jason may forget to pick me up from the airport. I will be angry at him then.
If
2. We didn't have to wait in the line because we had the members' cards.
Hadn't
3. Every time you open the door, swarms of mosquitoes come into the house.
If
4. You would have been allowed to travel alone if you had been over 10, then.
You could
5. People don't understand the problem and so they don't pay much attention to it.
If
6. But for Joseph, we would still be dragging behind with our work.
Were
7. If you don't open the door, we'll have to use force.
Open
8. There were horrible traffic jams all along the way and that's why we came late.
If it
9. Perhaps, you would be able to afford more if you saved more. (MIGHT)
.....
10. Whenever we slam the door, our father hits the roof.
If
11. If by any chance you hear strange noises coming from inside, turn off the machine.
Should

12. Stricter security measures will be introduced if the situation doesn't get any better.
Unless
13. Weren't it for my sister's help, I wouldn't cope with minding my five children.
But
14. The paint was dripping on the carpet and it damaged it.
If
15. Should anyone of you feel worse, press the red button. (HAPPENS)
.....

5. Nierzeczywisty czas przeszły - Unreal past

Wraz z niektórymi angielskimi czasownikami, zwrotami oraz konstrukcjami stosuje się czasy przeszłe, choć znaczenie jakie w tym przypadku wyrażają odnosi się do teraźniejszości. Stąd nazwa nierzeczywistego czasu przeszłego (*unreal past*).

Czasownik **be** podobnie jak w przypadku trybu warunkowego II może występować w postaci regularnej odmiany **Past Simple** lub w postaci **were** przy każdej osobie liczby pojedynczej i mnogiej.

5.1. Wish + Past Simple / Past Continuous

Czasownik **wish** wyraża życzenie lub żal spowodowany faktem, że określona sytuacja nie jest taka, jaką według danej osoby powinna lub mogłaby być.

Konstrukcja taka ma następującą strukturę:

podmiot + **wish (that)** + podmiot + **Past Simple / Past Continuous**

I'm sorry I'm too short. = I wish I was / were taller.

I'm sorry Tara doesn't like me. = I wish Tara liked me

I'm sorry I don't live in the country. = I wish I lived in the country.

We're sorry you aren't going with us. = We wish you were going with us.

Podobne życzenie lub żal można wyrazić w czasie przeszłym np.

I was sorry I didn't have any money on me. = I wished I had some money on me.

He was sorry he wasn't playing with me. = He wished he was / were playing with me.

Zamiast czasu przeszłego po czasowniku **wish** można także zastosować czasownik modalny **would**. Wyrażone w ten sposób znaczenie jest dość podobne, jednakże zwykle dotyczy ono faktu lub stanu, który może ulec zmianie w przyszłości jeżeli

osoba, której życzenie to dotyczy wyrazi na to ochotę.

Często znaczenie to zblizone jest do pewnej formy żalu lub niezadowolenia wynikającego z aktualnego stanu rzeczy. Może także wskazywać na niewielką nadzieję na zmianę określonej sytuacji. Należy pamiętać, iż w tej konstrukcji podmiot zdania z **would** nigdy nie będzie taki sam, jak podmiot zdania z czasownikiem **wish** np.

I'm sorry my husband doesn't bring me flowers. =

I wish my husband would bring me flowers.

We're sorry our son doesn't learn much. =

We wish our son would learn more.

Konstrukcję tę można także zastosować z podmiotem bezosobowym np.

I'm sorry it's raining. =

I wish it would stop raining.

That dog of theirs keeps barking all the time. =

I wish that dog of theirs would stop barking.

Niekiedy czasownik **would** może opisywać irytujący nawyk lub przyzwyczajenie. Zdanie takie może stanowić formę krytyki lub propozycji zmiany obecnego stanu rzeczy np.

I wish you wouldn't drive so fast. It's very irresponsible.

We wish you wouldn't smoke so much.

5.2. Wish + Past Perfect

Czas **Past Perfect** stosowany jest w konstrukcji z czasownikiem **wish** jeżeli życzenie odnosi się do czasu przeszłego i nie jest możliwe do spełnienia np.

We're sorry we didn't have enough time to call on Brad. =

We wish we had had enough time to call on Brad.

The captain is sorry he fired the first shot. =

The captain wished he hadn't fired the first shot.

Podobny żal lub życzenie można wyrazić w czasie przeszłym np.

We were sorry our son didn't study in Oxford. =

*We wished our son had studied in Oxford.
I was sorry they turned down my proposal. =
I wished they hadn't turned down my proposal.*

EXERCISE BANK

I. Write sentences using the verb **wish**.

1. I'm sorry I am so busy in the afternoon.

.....

2. Frank is sorry he didn't take a photo of the unique bird.

.....

3. We're sorry our products don't sell well.

.....

4. Judy is sorry she forgot about Michael's birthday.

.....

5. Steve was sorry he had to work so long everyday.

.....

6. I'm sorry my brother doesn't tell me about his problems.

.....

7. We were sorry we hadn't taken the map.

.....

8. Robert is sorry he doesn't know Alice's phone number.

.....

9. The children are sorry their parents don't read them any bedtime stories.

.....

10. I am sorry I have made such a silly mistake.

.....

5.3. Would rather / sooner

Konstrukcja **would rather / sooner** wyraża preferencję w czasie teraźniejszym. Jeżeli podmiot zdania z **would rather / sooner** jest taki sam jak podmiot zdania, które po nim następuje, wówczas czasownik ma postać niepełnego bezokolicznika (*bare infinitive*) np.

I would rather stay at home.

We'd rather live in the countryside than in the city.

W języku formalnym zdanie może rozpoczynać się od **Rather than** np.

Rather than hire extra workers we would have our employees do the job.

W czasie przeszłym niespełnioną preferencję można wyrazić, stosując formę *perfect infinitive* np.

I'd rather have eaten pizza than pasta. The pasta tasted horrible.

Ron went to Majorca but he would sooner have gone to Hawaii.

Jeżeli podmiot drugiego zdania jest inny, czasownik przybiera formę nierzeczywistego czasu przeszłego np.

I'd rather you didn't tell Ann what I've told you.

I'd sooner the children played in the garden.

EXERCISE BANK

I. Complete the sentences using **would rather**.

1. Tom: ‘I’m going to study law.’

Tom’s parents: ‘We medicine.’

2. Ellen: ‘Have some tea.’

Sally: ‘I coffee than tea.’

3. We bought a Fiat but we a Mercedes.

4. Lucy: ‘I’m going to invite Peter Watts to my birthday party.’

Donna: ‘I him. Nobody likes him.’

5. Customer: ‘Can I pay by credit card?’

Shop owner: ‘I by cash, sir.’

6. William: ‘I will do the cleaning tomorrow, mom. I promise.’

William’s mother: ‘I it today.’

7. Ms Ginger worked as a mere typist but she
as the manager’s assistant.

8. Juliet: ‘Let’s watch a drama.’

Mark: ‘I a comedy.’

9. Nurse: ‘You’re in hospital, Mr Edwards. You have to eat diet meals.’

Mr Edwards: ‘I some pork chops than
your diet meals.’

10. Betty: ‘Can I borrow your new dress, Nina?’

Nina: 'I my clothes at all.'

5.4. It's (high/about) time

Konstrukcja **it's time** wyraża znaczenie 'już czas' i może wystąpić z bezokolicznikiem czasownika oraz z dopełnieniem np.

It's time to get up.

It's time for you to leave home.

Ta sama konstrukcja może wystąpić z dopełnieniem oraz z czasownikiem w postaci nierzeczywistego czasu przeszłego (*unreal past*). Konstrukcja taka wskazuje na fakt, że wykonanie określonej czynności opóźnia się za bardzo np.

It's time you told your parents about the engagement.

It's time Chris started respecting our principles.

Konstrukcję tę można rozbudować, dodając przymiotnik **high** lub przyimek **about** np.

It's high time Mary went out to school.

It's about time you had the sore tooth pulled out.

Konstrukcja ta w postaci zaprzeczonego pytania może stanowić formę sugestii lub rady np.

Isn't it about time you and Jonah got married?

Isn't it high time Alan had his car overhauled?

Należy pamiętać, że czasownik **be** występujący z konstrukcją **it's time** przybiera formę regularnej odmiany **Past Simple** np.

It's high time Mike was leaving.

It's time you were going home.

EXERCISE BANK

I. Complete the sentences using **it's (high) time** and the appropriate phrases.

- | | |
|-------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| a. settle your debts | f. have a rest |
| b. grease the hinges | g. stop acting like a child |
| c. find yourself a decent job | h. make a choice |
| d. clean it | i. go to a barber |
| e. buy a new pair | j. go out |

1. You've wasted too much time sitting at home doing nothing. It
.....
2. Hurry up! It's half past five and the performance starts at six. It
.....
3. Adam has been chopping wood since early morning. It
..... He must be awfully tired.
4. You keep promising your creditors to pay their money back soon, but you haven't paid a penny yet. It
5. Your hair is much too long. It
6. Your shoes look worn out. It
7. Will Michael never grow up? He's almost twenty. It
8. You've been thinking for too long. It
9. The Browns' backyard is all covered in fallen leaves. It
10. The door in your bathroom creak. It

5.5. As if / as though

Po spójnikach **as if / as though** - 'jak gdyby' może występować nierzeczywisty czas przeszły (*unreal past*). Wyrażane w ten sposób znaczenie ma charakter przypuszczenia. Jeżeli czasownik w zdaniu głównym jest w czasie teraźniejszym, wówczas czas **Past Simple** po spójnikach **as if / as though** odnosi się również do teraźniejszości. Czasownik **be** przybiera formę **were** po każdej osobie liczby pojedynczej oraz mnogiej np.

'He acts as if he were the boss here.' 'Perhaps he is the boss.'

Rob behaves as though he were allowed to do anything.

Mary speaks as though she had the most to say.

Czasownik w zdaniu głównym może wystąpić w formie czasu przeszłego. W takim przypadku czasownik znajdujący się po spójniku **as if / as though** przybiera postać czasu przeszłego **Past Simple** lub **Past Continuous** jeżeli opisuje czynność wykonywaną równorzęduśnie np.

Thomas nodded his head as though he understood what the French girl was saying.

Wes behaved as if he were the most important.

Odnosząc się jednakże bezpośrednio do czynności wcześniejszej w czasie, po spójniku **as if / as though** należy zastosować czas **Past Perfect**. W zdaniu głównym czasownik może wystąpić w czasie **Present** lub **Past** zależnie od wymaganej perspektywy czasowej np.

Brian speaks as if he had taken part in the expedition himself. But he didn't.

That girl talked to me as though we had met before but we didn't.

The man looked as though he had had a plastic surgery.

Powyzsze przykłady odnoszą się do sytuacji nierzeczywistej lub istniejącej w sferze przypuszczenia. Jednakże spójnik **as if / as though** może także wyrażać znaczenie realne. W takim przypadku forma czasowa występująca po spójniku uzależniona jest od kontekstu oraz wymaganego znaczenia np.

I've been fighting with another boy.' 'You look as if you've been fighting, indeed'

She is the boss here and she acts as though she is one.

I felt as though I was going to faint and I did faint.

EXERCISE BANK

I. Put the verbs in the correct form.

1. Vincent doesn't belong to our society but he talks as though he
(be) one of us.
2. Nothing serious happened to the girl but she was screaming as though she (suffer) from really heavy injuries.
3. Stop behaving as if you (have) no other bosses above you.
4. Edward's foolhardy deeds shock everybody. Sometimes he acts as though he

- (be) immortal.
5. When the explorers went into the ancient tomb it looked as though somebody (break) into it before.
6. ‘Listen! What’s that sound upstairs? It sounds as if someone (snore).’ ‘It may be Michael. He likes to have a nap at this time of the day.’
7. Just listen to him. He speaks as though it (be) him who made the design. In fact, he didn’t contribute a single idea.’
8. Is anything wrong, Janet? Why are you so pale? You look as though you (just/see) a ghost.
9. The first moment we met, I knew we were made for each other. We talked as if we (know) each other for years.
10. You sound as though you (have) a blocked nose. Why don’t you try using some nose drops?

5.6. Had better

Zwrot **had better** pozornie wygląda jak konstrukcja w czasie przeszłym. Jednak znaczenie, które wyraża, odnosi się do teraźniejszości lub przyszłości. Czasownik występujący po zwrocie **had better** przybiera postać niepełnego bezokolicznika (*bare infinitive*). Zwrot ten stosowany jest jako forma sugestii, rady lub zalecenia np.

If you’re feeling cold, you had better put on some warm clothes.

You’d better not touch the insect. It might sting you.

Joe had better apologize for coming late.

Zwrot **had better** stosunkowo rzadko występuje w postaci pytania, chyba że jest to pytanie zaprzeczone, stanowiące formę sugestii np.

Hadn’t you better slow down a little?

Hadn’t Ann better consult her doctor before taking the pills?

EXERCISE BANK

I. Complete the sentences using **had better** and the appropriate phrases.

- | | |
|------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| a. inform them in advance | f. not add it in your coffee |
| b. turn the music down a bit | g. change the shampoo |
| c. not leave any food on the table | h. not walk on the ice |
| d. drive carefully | i. keep the documents in a safe place |

- e. not talk aloud j. not touch it
1. The road is slippery. You
2. The wire may be live. Sam
3. The milk's gone sour. You
4. Our customers may not know that the prices have changed. We
-
5. We
during the lecture or the professor may get angry.
6. The children
It may still be very thin.
7. We
or the dog may reach it.
8. You
We don't want them to get lost, do we?
9. Your hair is coming out. (you)
10. I
or the neighbours from downstairs will call the police again.

PROGRESS TEST

Nierzeczywisty czas przeszły - Unreal past

I. Complete the sentences with the appropriate words.

about as better have sooner though time were would (x2)

1. I wish you talk to me more about your feelings. I never know what you feel and think.
2. Mr Holmes drives a hard bargain. I'd we did our business with some other partner.
3. Hadn't you carry the rucksack on your back? You'll get more tired carrying it in your hands.
4. Simon behaves as he were the most important person in the office. I'm not going to tolerate that any longer.
5. It's time we had lunch. I'm starving.
6. We'd rather stayed in a hotel instead of the shabby guest house at the outskirts of the city.
7. Tom wishes he an explorer. His life would be more exciting, then.
8. The culprit keeps denying if he believed he would not be

- sentenced. But the police say they have hard evidence against him.
9. ‘Shall we start the experiment now?’ ‘Yeah. It’s we began it.’
10. I rather move to a hot country than live my life in a cold and wet place like this.
- II.** Put the verbs in the correct tense form.
1. ‘Can I have a day off next Monday?’ ‘I’d rather you (come) to work. We’re going to have an official visit then.’
 2. There was a lot of snow in the mountains. I wished I (take) my skiing equipment. That would have been fun.
 3. Isn’t it about time you (take) greater care of your health? Why don’t you stop smoking and take up some sport?
 4. Just take a look at our latest financial reports. Doesn’t it look as though we (keep) losing money?
 5. You had better (not feed) the elephants. It is forbidden in the zoo.
 6. All I got from Frank was a piece of advice but I’d sooner (get) some financial support. That would have been of greater benefit.
 7. Who’s that nice girl standing beside the window? She’s smiling at me as if she (know) me well, but I don’t remember meeting her before.
 8. I don’t see the point of taking another loan. I’d rather we (use) the resources we have at hand now.
 9. The new prime minister boasts as though it (be) him who launched the reforms. In fact, it was his predecessor’s original idea.
 10. We wish David (not change) his school. Ever since it happened, he hasn’t made much progress.
 11. I’d rather William (do) the interpretation. My French isn’t good enough and I might make too many critical mistakes, I’m afraid.
 12. ‘My house has been broken into! What shall I do?’ ‘You had better (not touch) anything. There might be fingerprints. Just call the police.’
 13. That new boyfriend of Tina makes an impression of a crass type. We’d rather she (find) herself a better date.
 14. Justine keeps bullying everybody and he gets away with it. It’s high time someone (teach) him a lesson.
 15. The local farmers wish it (rain) more in the region. That might help them increase their harvest.

III. Rewrite the sentences using the prompts so the meaning remains the same.

1. I suggest you should inform your superiors about the system failure.

Hadn't

2. We're late. We should be going now. (HIGH TIME)

.....

3. It would be better if Angela consulted her decision with her parents. (RATHER)

We

4. It's a pity I didn't have my video camera. (WISH)

.....

5. Wendy only pretends to understand the theory. (SPEAKS/AS IF)

.....

6. I prefer observing wild animals to hunting them. (SOONER)

.....

7. It wouldn't be wise to leave the baby unattended. (HAD BETTER)

You

8. I would have felt better if I had had the appointment much later.

I'd rather

9. Joseph was sorry he couldn't provide for his family.

Joseph wished

10. Do you prefer having the test postponed to writing it now? (RATHER)

.....

11. The first candidate made an impression of a well-educated person. (AS THOUGH)

The first candidate looked

12. I'm sorry my parents don't give me any pocket money.

I wish

13. It was a pity that I didn't attend professor Atkinson's lecture. (SOONER)

I

14. Why hasn't the boat sailed to the sea yet? (ABOUT)

Isn't it

15. Howard regretted not accepting the job offer.

Howard wished

6. Mowa zależna - Indirect speech / Następstwo czasów - The sequence of tenses

Mowa zależna stanowi formę relacji, w której następuje przytoczenie wypowiedzi. Relacja taka może przybrać formę cytatu, czyli dokładnego odtworzenia wypowiedzi bez wprowadzenia jakichkolwiek przeobrażeń (*direct speech*) np.

Terry said: 'I am going to hire an attorney.'
'We have stopped the production.', they explained.

Inną formę relacji stanowi odtworzenie wypowiedzi przy użyciu własnych słów (*indirect speech*). Wiąże się to zwykle z niezbędnymi zmianami struktury relacjonowanej wypowiedzi w celu zachowania poprawności gramatycznej zdania, co jednak nie powinno wpływać znaczaco na zmianę treści zawartej w niej informacji.

Aby przytoczyć czyjąś wypowiedź lub myśl, należy użyć jeden z czasowników 'relacjonujących', do których zaliczają się m.in.:

**admit, advise, agree, announce, answer, ask, assume, believe, claim,
decide, deny, expect, complain, explain, point out, pretend, promise,
propose, recommend, reply, say, suggest, suppose, tell, think, warn**

Z większością z wymienionych powyżej czasowników można użyć spójnika **that** (*that-clauses*), po którym następuje relacja wypowiedzi. Zwykle w mowie potocznej spójnik ten jest pomijany. Po niektórych czasownikach może być wymagana inna forma gramatyczna, co niekiedy uzależnione jest od tego, czy relacjonowana wypowiedź ma postać twierdzenia, pytania, zaprzeczenia, polecenia lub sugestii np.

Arnold: 'I don't like hiking.' → *Arnold says he doesn't like hiking.*
Adam: 'Let's have a big party.' → *Adam suggested having a big party.*
Frank: 'Are you in charge here?' → *Frank asked if I was in charge there.*
Betty: 'I have seen the film twice.' → *Betty said she had seen the film twice.*
Vicki: 'I will not sign the petition' → *Vicki said she would not sign the petition.*

Jedna z zasadniczych zmian, które występują w mowie zależnej, uwarunkowana jest zasadą następstwa czasów (*the sequence of tenses*). Według tej zasady, jeżeli czasownik relacjonujący zdania nadzawanego przybiera formę czasu przeszłego (*Past*), to w zdaniu podzewanym następuje przesunięcie perspektywy czasowej.
Poniższe zestawienie ilustruje typowe zmiany według reguły następstwa czasów.

Present Simple → Past Simple

Nicky: 'I want to change my job.' → *Nicky said she wanted to change her job.*

Present Continuous → Past Continuous

Ellen: 'I am writing an essay.' → *Ellen explained she was writing an essay.*

Present Perfect → Past Perfect

Wendy: 'I have sold my house.' → *Wendy told us that she had sold her house.*

Present Perfect Continuous → Past Perfect Continuous

Ike: 'I have been listening to music.' → *Ike said she had been listening to music.*

Future Simple → Future in the Past / Conditional

Fred: 'I will repair your watch.' → *Fred promised he would repair my watch.*

be going to → was / were going to

Sue: 'I'm going to have a bath.' → *Sue said she was going to have a bath.*

Future Continuous → Future Continuous in the Past / Conditional continuous

Sam: 'I'll be working at one.' → *Sam replied he would be working at one.*

Future Perfect (Continuous) → Future Perfect (Continuous) in the Past

Rob: 'We will have gone by then.' → *Rob said they would have gone by then.*

Past Simple → Past Perfect

Andy: 'I worried a lot.' → *Andy said he had worried a lot.*

Past Continuous → Past Perfect Continuous

Eva: 'I was working at that time.' → *Eva said she'd been working at that time.*

Czasownik modalny **I/we shall** w mowie zależnej zwykle przybiera postać **would** lub **should**, jeżeli wypowiedź jest relacjonowana przez tę samą osobę np.

Rosy: 'I shall bring your tape.' → *Rosy said she would bring my tape.*

I: 'I shall settle down here.' → *I believed I would/should settle down there.*

Czasownik modalny **I/we should** w mowie zależnej również przybiera postać **would** lub **should**, jeżeli wypowiedź jest relacjonowana przez tę samą osobę np.

Vincent: 'If we had more money I should build a garage, too.' →

Vincent told me that if he had more money he would build a garage, too.

I: 'I should love you the same even if you were a poor man.' →

I said that I should love you the same even if you were a poor man.'

Czasy przeszłe **Past** według zasady następstwa czasów zastępowane są w mowie zależnej przez czasy **Past Perfect**. Dzieje się tak zwykle w języku formalnym lub pisany. W mowie potocznej czasy **Past** mogą i często pozostawać bez zmiany jeżeli

nie zachodzi obawa istotnej różnicy w znaczeniu wyrażonej treści np.

Jenny: 'I met Allan in 1996.' →

Jenny said she met / had met Allan in 1996.

Bob: 'I drank two bottles of beer in the pub.' →

Bob said she drank / had drunk two bottles of beer in the pub.

Czas **Past Contiuous** jest zastępowany przez **Past Perfect Continuous** tylko wtedy, gdy sytuacja dotyczy czynności dokonanej - zakończonej. W innych kontekstach czas ten w mowie zależnej pozostaje bez zmiany np.

Lisa: 'I was considering changing my job but then I gave it up.' →

Lisa said she had been considering changing her job but then she had given it up.

Tom: 'We were repairing the roof all day.' →

Tom told me they were repairing the roof all day.

Inny wyjątek stanowią zdania czasowe (*Time Clauses*), w których czasowniki w czasie przeszłym **Past** mogą pozostać w tej samej postaci w mowie zależnej np.

Alex: 'As soon as we arrived, the hosts showed us round the place.' →

Alex said that as soon as they arrived the hosts showed them round the place.

Angie: 'When I was visiting Madrid, I made a few new friends.' →

Angie said that when she was visiting Madrid she (had) made a few new friends.

W sytuacji, gdy określony stan rzeczy opisany czasownikiem w czasie przeszłym (*Past*) nadal obowiązuje, formy czasownika nie należy zmieniać np.

Debbie: 'I never liked Simon because he was such a coward.' →

Debbie said she never liked Simon because he was such a coward.

(Debbie still doesn't like Simon because he is such a coward.)

W trybach warunkowych II i III czasowniki nie zmieniają swojej postaci w mowie zależnej np.

Paul: 'If I saw a ghost, I would run away.' →

Paul said that if he saw a ghost, he would run away.

Pam: 'If we had insured the boat, the compensation would have been bigger.' →

Pam said that if they had insured the boat, the compensation would have been bigger.

W trybie warunkowym I następuje zmiana form czasowników według reguły następstwa czasów np.

Rick: 'If the telephone rings, I will not answer it.' →

Rick said that if the telephone rang, he would not answer it.

Podobna zasada dotyczy zdań czasowych (*Time Clauses*) w czasie teraźniejszym np.

Peter: 'As soon as I recover, I will resume training.' →

Peter said that as soon as he recovered, he would resume training.

Terry: 'When I have graduated from university, I'm going to move abroad.' →

Terry said that when he had graduated from university he was going to move abroad.

W mowie zależnej nie zmienione pozostają także formy czasowników występujących w nierzeczywistym czasie przeszłym (*unreal past*)

*Erik: 'I wish I **had** a girlfriend.'* → *Erik said he wished he **had** a girlfriend.*

*Sue: 'I wish Lenny **hadn't quit**'* → *Sue said she wished Lenny **hadn't quit**.*

*Wes: 'You'd better **take** the medicine.'* → *Wes told me I'd better **take** the medicine.*

*Pete: 'It is high time we **went** home.'* → *Pete said it was high time they **went** home.*

*Mike: 'Sue acts as if she **knew** better.'* → *Mike said Sue acted as if she **knew** better.*

*Amy: 'I'd rather you **kept** close to me.'* → *Amy said she'd rather I **kept** close to her.*

Czasowniki modalne **can** oraz **may** przechodzą typowe zmiany w mowie zależnej np.

can → **could**

*Rob: 'I **can** ski.'* → *Rob said he **could** / was able to ski.*

may → **might**

*Cindy: 'Joe **may** be in his office.'* → *Cindy said Joe **might** be in his office.*

Inne czasowniki modalne: **could**, **might**, **ought to**, **should**, **would**, **used to** pozostają w tej samej postaci np.

*Ronald: 'I **could** stay longer if it was necessary.'* →

*Ronald said he **could** stay longer if it was necessary.*

*David: 'We **used to** meet in the club three times a week.'* →

*David said they **used to** meet in the club three times a week.*

*Mr Woods: 'You **should** ask for your parents' permission.'* →

*Mr Woods told us the we **should** ask for our parents' permission.*

Czasowniki modalne **can / could, may / might** mogą w mowie zależnej pozostać nie zmienione lub mogą być zastąpione zwrotem **be able to** lub **be allowed to**, zależnie od wymaganego znaczenia np.

Mary: 'I can swim well.'

Mary said she could / was able to swim well.

Brian: 'I could play the guitar then.' →

Brian said he could / had been able to play the guitar then.

Mike: 'I may play in my neighbour's garden.' →

Mike said he might / was allowed to play in his neighbour's garden.

Toby: 'We couldn't enter my father's study.' →

Toby said they couldn't / had not been allowed to enter their father's study.

Czasownik modalny **must** wyrażający konieczność lub obowiązek może pozostać w tej samej postaci, lub też może zastąpić go czasownik **had to / would have to** w zależności od wymaganego znaczenia np.

John: 'I must return home before midnight.' →

John said he must / had to return home before midnight.

Helen: 'We must insulate the house before winter comes.' →

Helen said they must / would have to insulate the house before winter came.

Czasownik **must** wyrażający logiczny wniosek, sugestię lub stałą konieczność, a także forma **mustn't** wyrażająca zakaz, w mowie zależnej pozostają w tej samej postaci np.

Jerry: 'She must be that girl I met on the train. I can't be wrong.' →

Jerry said that she must be that girl he had met on the train.

Steve: 'We must meet one day. That would be very nice.' →

Steve suggested that we must meet one day.

The instructor: 'You mustn't press the red button.' →

The instructor said that I mustn't press the red button.

Czasownik modalny **need / needn't** w mowie zależnej może pozostać bez zmian lub też może zastąpić go czasownik **have to** np.

Mandy: 'We needn't buy tickets. It's free.' →

Mandy said we needn't / didn't have to buy tickets.

Robert: 'Need I come on Saturday?' →
Robert asked if he had to come on Saturday.

Niekiedy w języku potocznym nie następuje zmiana formy czasownika w zdaniu relacjonowanym pomimo, że czasownik w zdaniu relacjonującym ma postać czasu przeszłego (*Past*). Dzieje się tak w sytuacji, gdy relacjonowana informacja ma charakter bieżący i dotyczy wydarzeń, które nadal się odbywają lub opinii, które nadal obowiązują. Zmiana formy czasowej w zdaniu relacjonowanym może wskazywać na brak pewności, czy sytuacja ma nadal charakter bieżący np.

It was reported that the meeting will / would take place in Amsterdam.

They said they will not / would not stop developing the new project.

My boss told me that he wants / wanted to change the plan.

She said she is not going / was not going to give up easily.

W mowie zależnej oprócz zmiany form czasowników zmianie ulegają także inne części zdania. Należą do nich niektóre przysłówkowe określenia czasu oraz miejsca. Poniższe zestawienie ilustruje zmiany wymagane w mowie zależnej.

now → then, at the time
here → there
this/that → these/those
today → that day
tonight → that night
yesterday → the day before
this week / month → that week / month
the day before yesterday → two days before
tomorrow → the next / following day
the day after tomorrow → in two day's time
next week / month → the following week / month, the week / month after
last week / month → the previous week / month, the week / month before
a week / month ago → the previous a week / month,
a week / month before

Paula: 'We're leaving tomorrow.' →
Paula told me they were leaving the next day.

Simon: 'I broke my arm last year.' →
Simon said that he had broken his arm the previous year.

Christina: 'I want to spend the rest of my life here.' →
Christina said she wanted to spend the rest of her life there.

Zmiana określenia czasowego nie jest konieczna jeżeli wypowiedź jest relacjonowana tego samego dnia np.

Adam: 'I'm not going to pick you up today.' →
Adam told me he wasn't going to pick me up today.

Zaimki wskazujące **this** / **these** oraz **that** / **those** w mowie zależnej zwykle zastępowane są przez przedimek **the** np.

Fran: 'Where did you buy this dress?' →
Fran asked me where I had bought the dress.

Dan: 'We've had those two cats for eleven years.' →
Dan said they had had the two cats for eleven years.

6.1. Zdania twierdzące w mowie zależnej

Najczęstszym sposobem relacjonowania wypowiedzi twierdzących w mowie zależnej jest zastosowanie czasowników ‘relacjonujących’ typu:

acknowledge, admit, advise, agree, announce, answer, argue, assume, assure, believe, claim, complain, consider, convince, decide, declare, deny, expect, explain, find out, indicate, inform, mention, notify, notice, object, persuade, point out, pretend, promise, propose, recommend, remember, remind, reply, report, say, suggest, suppose, tell, think, threaten, warn

Zdanie złożone ze spójnikiem **that** (*that clauses*) jest jedną z częstszych form relacji. Czasowniki po których można zastosować tę konstrukcję to m.in.

acknowledge, admit, advise, agree, announce, answer, argue, assume, assure, believe, claim, complain, convince, decide, declare, deny, expect, explain, find out, indicate, inform, mention, notice, point out, pretend, promise, propose, recommend, remember, remind, reply, report, say, suggest, suppose, tell, think, threaten, warn

Nick: 'I'm going to get married.' →
Nick announced that he was going to get married.

Joan: 'I was being followed by someone.' →
Joan claimed that she was being followed by someone.

The cashier: 'Your bank account is in the red, sir.' →
The cashier informed me that my bank account was in the red.

Gill: 'I have left the floppy on my desk in the office.' →
Gill remembered that she had left the floppy on the desk in her office.

Mark: 'The bank may want you to pay extra interest.' →
Mark explained to me that the bank might want me to pay extra interest.

Barry: 'I will sue you if you don't settle the accounts by Friday.' →
Barry threatened that he would sue us unless we settled the accounts by Friday.

Jimmy: 'There are usually huge traffic jams at this time of the day.' →
Jimmy reminded me that there were usually huge traffic jams at that time of the day.

Jak wskazują powyższe przykłady, po niektórych czasownikach relacjonujących może pojawić się dopełnienie w postaci rzeczownika lub zaimka. Do czasowników takich należą m.in.

advise, assure, convince, inform, promise, remind, tell, warn

*Mike assured **me** that he would not forget about the meeting.*
*I promised **my children** that I would bring them some presents.*
*They informed **us** that they had changed their address and phone number.*

W przypadku innych czasowników dopełnienie w zdaniu relacjonującym może wystąpić po przyimku **to**. Do grupy tej należą m.in.

admit, announce, complain, explain, indicate, mention, point out, propose, recommend, reply, report, say, suggest

*The man complained **to the waiter** that the soup was too salty.*
*Jules pointed out **to us** that the solution hadn't been successful.*
*Martha said **to Alan** that she wasn't going to tolerate his rude behaviour.*

Po niektórych czasownikach występujących ze spójnikiem **that** dopełnienie może być wprowadzone jedynie przy zastosowaniu przyimków **of** lub **with**. Do czasowników tych należą:

(1) ask, beg, demand, require + of

They demanded (of us) that we should work overtime that week.
The man begged (of passers-by) that they should spare a penny.

(2) **agree, argue, confirm, disagree, plead** + with

I agreed (with Michael) that the remark was not to the point.

She pleaded (with the burglars) that they should not harm her children.

Konstrukcje zilustrowane powyższymi przykładami mają charakter formalny i raczej rzadko stosowane są w języku potocznym.

Czasowniki **ask** oraz **beg** mogą także wystąpić z konstrukcją bezokolicznikową np.

We asked Gillian to show us the recent report.

I begged Tom to come and help me.

Oprócz zdania ze spójnikiem **that**, po wielu czasownikach można zastosować inne formy gramatyczne równie dobrze nadające się do relacjonowania wypowiedzi w mowie zależnej. Jedną z takich form jest **Gerund (-ing clause)**. Występuje on z takimi czasownikami jak m.in.:

accuse of, admit, advise, apologize for, deny, forget, insist on, mention, recommend, remember, report, suggest, thank for

Jeffrey denied stealing the pen case.

Gina didn't remember signing the agreement.

Somebody mentioned seeing you in the casino.

Jenny thanked us warmly for lending a helping hand.

Inną potocznie używaną formą jest konstrukcja bezokolicznikowa stosowana po takich czasownikach jak m.in.:

advise, agree, allow, claim, consent, convince, decide, demand, encourage, hope, inspire, instruct, invite, refuse, offer, persuade, order, pretend, promise, propose, regret, remind, request, resolve, tell, threaten, urge, volunteer, want

Czasowniki oznaczone pochyłą czcionką występują z dopełnieniem np.

*Dave convinced **me** to join in.*

Ms Taylor demanded to see the files.

*Alan reminded **us** to confirm the booking.*

*Janet offered to translate the article for **me**.*

*My parents encouraged **me** to take up some sport.*

The young people volunteered to distribute the leaflets.

*The rock star's manager advised **her** to wait for a better offer.*

6.2. Sugestie, polecenia, propozycje, prośby oraz żądania w mowie zależnej

W mowie zależnej dość często zdarza się, że relacjonowana sugestia, polecenie, propozycja, prośba lub żądanie wyrażona jest przy użyciu innych słów niż w oryginalnej wypowiedzi. Zwykle niezbędną jest zastosowanie czasownika o właściwym znaczeniu tak, aby przetworzona informacja jak najwierniej odtwarzała oryginalną wypowiedź. Do najczęściej stosowanych czasowników wyrażających znaczenia, o których mowa należą:

**advise, ask, beg, command, convince, declare, demand, encourage,
forbid, implore, invite, offer, order, plead with, persuade, propose,
recommend, remind, request, suggest, tell, threaten, urge, warn**

Należy zwrócić uwagę na różnice w sposobie zastosowania poszczególnych czasowników, a zwłaszcza na rodzaj formy gramatycznej w zdaniu relacjonowanym - (*Gerund, infinitive, that-clause*) np.

(1) Sugestie, rady, propozycje

Tina: 'Let's buy a map.' → *Tina suggested buying a map.*
Tina suggested that we (should) buy a map.

Colin: 'If I were you I would take the job.' → *Colin advised me to take the job.*

Mick: 'I think you should take a rest.' → *Mick urged me to take a rest.*

Jack: 'Why don't you open a shop?' → *Jack recommended our opening a shop.*

Diane: 'Visit me in Dover.' → *Diane invited us to visit her in Dover.*

(2) Polecenia, prośby, żądania

Frank: 'Buy me a packet of cigarettes, please.' →
Frank asked his wife to buy him a packet of cigarettes.

Policeman: 'Don't move.' → *The policeman told / ordered me not to move.*

Mr Hicks: 'I want this job finished by tomorrow.' →
Mr Hicks insisted that the job (should) be finished by the following day.

Leader: 'Make your beds immediately.' →
Our leader ordered us to make our beds immediately.
Stewart: 'Please, please give me another chance.' →
Stewart begged Rita to give him another chance.

(3) ostrzeżenia, groźby, zakazy

Mrs Watson: 'Don't wake the baby up.' →

Mrs Watson told me not to wake the baby up.

Harry: 'You'd better not leave the door unlocked at night.' →

Harry warned me not to leave the door unlocked at night.

Mr Dean: 'I'll call the police if you don't stop making noise.' →

Mr Dean threatened to call the police if the young men didn't stop making noise.

EXERCISE BANK

I. Put the verbs in the correct form.

1. Joan says that she (love) having guests at weekends.
2. Our science teacher told us that the earth (go) round the sun.
3. The visitors didn't know that the palace (build) in the 18th century by a German baron.
4. I have promised my wife that I (stop) smoking.
5. Tom claimed that he (see) a UFO on several occasions.
6. Mary says she (prefer) milk soup to porridge for breakfast.
7. The scientist believed his theory (be) revolutionary.
8. When arrived I found out that the meeting (still/go on) in the conference room.
9. Somebody told me you (keep) a poisonous snake in your flat. Is that true?
10. Daphne explained to me that she (run down) by a passing car.

II. Match each reported statement with the original phrase.

1. Molly suggested calling an ambulance.
2. Joe confirmed that they had called an ambulance.
3. Ronald answered that he had called an ambulance.
4. The man denied calling an ambulance.
5. Wendy insisted that we should call an ambulance.
6. Dave doubted whether they had called an ambulance.
7. Mr Sykes thanked his neighbour for calling an ambulance.
8. Charles agreed that an ambulance should be called.
9. Jimmy announced that he had called an ambulance.
10. Richard refused to call an ambulance.

- a. 'I think it's really important that we should call an ambulance.'
- b. 'Yes, it was me who called an ambulance.'
- c. 'We did call an ambulance.'
- d. 'Everybody listen to me! I've called an ambulance.'
- e. 'Good idea. We should call an ambulance.'
- f. 'No, I won't do it. I won't call an ambulance.'
- g. 'Why don't we call an ambulance?'
- h. 'I'm really grateful to you for calling an ambulance.'
- i. 'No, I'm telling you I didn't call an ambulance.'
- j. 'I don't think they had called an ambulance.'

III. Choose the correct answer or answers.

- 1. The driver that he had been drinking before driving.
 - a) refused
 - b) confirmed
 - c) denied
- 2. Brian me that he was thinking of setting up a private company.
 - a) told
 - b) said
 - c) assured
- 3. The solicitor that the case should be dismissed.
 - a) urged
 - b) advised
 - c) insisted
- 4. My secretary me of the meeting with the treasurer.
 - a) reminded
 - b) informed
 - c) indicated
- 5. I that I wasn't going to deliver another lecture.
 - a) repeated
 - b) mentioned
 - c) said
- 6. The passenger strongly to having his luggage searched.
 - a) denied
 - b) rejected
 - c) objected
- 7. My friend me to do a course in computer programming.
 - a) persuaded
 - b) invited
 - c) encouraged
- 8. One of the castaways making a huge bonfire on the beach.
 - a) offered
 - b) advised
 - c) recommended
- 9. The local travel agent us not to walk in the streets at night.
 - a) suggested
 - b) warned
 - c) recommended
- 10. The customer that the goods should be delivered in cardboard cartoons.
 - a) requested
 - b) ordered
 - c) demanded

IV. Rewrite the sentences in indirect speech using the appropriate verbs.

**admit allow apologize for expect invite
order point out remind volunteer warn**

1. ‘Let me draw your attention to the fact that the exchange rate is increasing.’, said the assistant.
The assistant
2. ‘Don’t drink the pond water.’, said the farmer to us.
The farmer
3. ‘Remember that you are driving me to the station tonight.’, said my mother to me.
My mother
4. ‘I’m so sorry that I’ve overcharged you.’, said Mr Bleak to the customer.
Mr Bleak
5. ‘I think my granny will visit us next week.’, said the girl.
The girl
6. ‘Come to my birthday party this Saturday.’, said Ryan to me.
Ryan
7. ‘Honestly speaking, I was sleeping during the lecture.’, said the student.
The student
8. ‘You are to clean the staircase and rake the fallen leaves.’, said the teacher to us.
The teacher
9. ‘You may take as many sweets as you like.’, said the shop owner to the children.
The shop owner
10. ‘I will chop the wood.’, said one of the scouts.
One of the scouts

V. Rewrite the sentences in indirect speech.

1. ‘You must be very careful when you drive in the city center, Jim’, said his father.
Jim’s father told
2. ‘If these problems arise again, I’ll have to make a complaint.’, said the customer.
The customer said
3. ‘I do want to speak to the manager.’, said Mrs Hobson.
Mrs Hobson insisted on
4. ‘We wish we were going to the cinema with Helen and Gary.’, said the children.
The children regretted

5. 'I saw Bill carrying a briefcase like yours yesterday.', said Tom.
Tom mentioned
6. 'All your meals taste really good, my darling.', said Mr Webb to his wife.
Mr Webb complimented
7. 'If I were in your place, I would contact the police.', said my friend.
My friend advised
8. 'There could have been more dissatisfied customers.', said the analyst.
The analyst suspected
9. 'We've been trying to find a good solution to the problem.', they said to us.
They informed us
10. 'It was Vicky that spread the gossip.', said Alice.
Alice accused

6.3. Pytania w mowie zależnej.

Relacjonowanie pytań w mowie zależnej prawie zawsze wiąże się ze zmianą w strukturze zdania relacjonowanego, którego składnia staje się podobna do składni zdania twierdzącego. W relacjonowanym pytaniu nie ma zatem ani inwersji, ani operatorów tworzących pytania, ani też znaku zapytania na końcu zdania. Jeżeli czasownik relacjonujący przybiera formę czasu przeszłego, w zdaniu relacjonowanym obowiązują takie same reguły następstwa czasów, jak w zdaniu twierdzącym. Czasownikami relacjonującymi pytania w mowie zależnej najczęściej są:

ask, inquire, wonder, want to know

Jedynie po czasowniku **ask** można użyć dopełnienie np.

*Rita: 'Do you live in London?' → Rita asked **me** if I lived in London.*

Jeżeli zdanie pytające ma charakter pytania ogólnego tj. bez zaimków pytających **wh-** (*yes/no questions*), wówczas spójnikiem łączącym zdanie nadrzędne z podrzędnym jest **if** lub **whether** np.

*'Are you coming to town this week?', asked Michael. →
Michael asked **if** I was coming to town that week.*

*'Did Pam make a complaint?', asked her father. →
Pam's father asked **whether** she had made a complaint.*

Jeżeli pytanie ma charakter szczegółowy tj. rozpoczyna się od zaimków **wh-** (**what**, **who**, **whose**, **when**, **where**, **which**, **why**), wówczas spójnikiem łączącym zdanie nadzędne ze zdaniem podrzędnym w mowie zależnej jest ten sam zaimek pytający np.

'What are you doing tonight?', asked Jessie. →
*Jesse wanted to know **what** I was doing that night.*

'Who was Alan talking to?', asked his mother. →
*Alan's mother asked **who** Alan was talking to.*

'Why have you been waiting so long?', asked Mr Richards. →
*Mr Richards inquired **why** we had been waiting so long.*

Jeżeli zaimek pytający pełni funkcję podmiotu, a pytanie ma strukturę zdania twierdzącego, wówczas w mowie zależnej struktura ta pozostaje bez zmian np.

'Who came first?', asked one of the spectators. →
One of the spectators wondered who had come first.

'What has made you so mad, Paul?', asked Paul's girlfriend. →
Paul's girlfriend asked what had made him so mad.

Jeżeli pytanie ma następującą strukturę,

Who / What / Which + be + dopełnienie

wówczas w mowie zależnej dopełnienie może zająć miejsce przed lub po czasowniku **be** np.

'Who is that man?', asked Mary. →
*Mary asked who (1) that man was.
(2) was that man.*

'What is the problem?', asked Tom. →
*Tom asked what (1) the problem was.
(2) was the problem.*

Stosując spójnik **whether** oraz czasowniki relacjonujące **wonder** i **want to know**, w zdaniu podrzędnym można użyć konstrukcję bezokolicznikową np.

'Shall I leave my luggage here or take it with me?', asked the traveller. →
The traveller wondered whether to leave his luggage there or take it with him.

Inne formy pytań.

Czasownik modalny **shall** w pytaniu o przyszłe wydarzenia, w mowie zależnej, podobnie jak **will**, zmienia się w **would** np.

*'What shall/will I do in twenty years' time?', said Alice. →
Alice wondered what she would do in twenty years' time.*

Jeżeli jednak czasownik **shall** wprowadza pytanie o charakterze propozycji, polecenia lub prośby o radę, w mowie zależnej zastępowany jest przez **should**, lub też inny czasownik opisujący podobne znaczenie np.

*'What shall I do with the documents?', asked the secretary. →
The secretary asked what she should do with the documents.*

*'Shall we eat something?', said Ronald. →
Ronald suggested eating something.*

*'Shall I give you a lift?', said Harry. →
(1) Harry asked if he should give us a lift.
(2) Harry offered to give us a lift.*

W pytaniu stanowiącym prośbę o radę można także zastosować konstrukcję bezokolicznikową, zwłaszcza gdy konieczne jest dokonanie wyboru np.

*'Shall I say something or keep silent?', asked the witness. →
The witness asked whether to say something or keep silent.*

*'Who shall we turn to for help?', asked the woman. →
The woman wondered who to turn to for help.*

Pytania rozpoczynające się od czasownika **will** oraz **would** również mogą wprowadzać szereg znaczeń takich, jak prośbę, propozycję, ofertę lub zaproszenie. W mowie zależnej znaczenie takie jest zwykle opisane przy użyciu odpowiedniego czasownika np.

*'Will/Would you stay and mind my baby, pleas? ', said Joan. →
Joan asked her mother to stay and mind her baby.*

*'Would you like to visit us on Sunday?', said Mrs Adams. →
Mrs Adams invited us to visit her on Sunday.*

*'Would you care for another drink, Mike?', said the host.' →
The host offered Mike another drink.*

Inne pytania o charakterze sugestii, propozycji, prośby o radę itp. w mowie zależnej relacjonowane są przy użyciu czasowników o podobnym znaczeniu np.

*'Why don't we hire more programmers?', said Mr Dawson. →
Mr Dowson suggested (1) hiring more programmers.
(2) that they (should) hire more programmers.*

*'How about going to a dentist, Mark?', said his sister. →
Mark's sister advised him to go to a dentist.*

EXERCISE BANK

I. Rewrite the questions in indirect speech.

1. 'When are you going to buy the car insurance?', said Mrs Lee.
Mrs Lee asked her husband
2. 'What caused the flooding last year?', asked the reporter.
The reporter inquired
3. 'Do you still work in the shoe factory?', said Brian.
Brian wanted to know
4. 'Who was responsible for the damage?', asked the inspector.
The inspector asked
5. 'What will you be doing this time tomorrow?', asked my brother.
My brother asked me
6. 'Have there been any important messages for me?', asked the manager.
The manager wanted to know
7. 'What will I do if I fail the exam?', said Mike to himself.
Mike wondered
8. 'Is anyone of you truly interested in DNA engineering?', asked the professor.
The professor asked his students
9. 'Was this letter delivered last Monday?', asked the assistant.
The assistant wondered
10. 'Have you filled in the form?', said the bank clerk.
The bank clerk inquired
11. 'Who is the leader of your team?', asked the journalist.
The journalist asked

12. ‘How often should I feed the goldfish?’, asked the boy.
The boy wanted to know
13. ‘Since when has the new motorway been built?’, asked Mr Bowles.
Mr Bowles inquired
14. ‘What shall I do when I grow up?’, said Patricia.
Patricia wondered
15. ‘Who could have done a thing like that?’, said the elderly man.
The elderly man wondered

PROGRESS TEST

Mowa zależna - Indirect speech

I. Rewrite the sentences in indirect speech using the appropriate verbs.

**advise ask assure complain encourage
inform invite offer suspect tell**

1. ‘Waiter! My soup is too salty.’, said the customer.
.....
2. ‘Shall I bring you a cup of coffee?’, said the assistant to me.
.....
3. ‘I’m sorry but your vacuum cleaner cannot be repaired.’, said the man to me.
.....
4. ‘The neighbours’ children could have destroyed our flowers.’, said Mrs Grant.
.....
5. ‘You’re welcome to walk around my farm.’, said the owner to the visitors.
.....
6. ‘If I were you, I wouldn’t hesitate to ask Gina to marry me.’, said Nicky.
.....
7. ‘How will you explain your yesterday’s absence?’, said my teacher.
.....
8. ‘Don’t be a coward. Ask Cindy to go out with you tomorrow evening.’, said Pete.
.....
9. ‘Get dressed immediately!’, said our captain.
.....
10. Don’t worry. Your application will certainly be considered.’, said the employer.
.....

II. Rewrite the statements and questions in the dialogue in indirect speech.

Reporter: ‘When did you decide to become a writer, Mr Howe?’

(1) *The reporter asked Mr Howe*

Mr Howe: ‘It was about ten years ago that I wrote my first stories.’

(2) *Mr Howe answered*

Reporter: ‘How many books have you written so far?’

(3) *The reporter asked*

Mr Howe: ‘Twenty two of my books have been published up to now.’

(4) *Mr Howe said*

Reporter: ‘Do you only write fiction and drama books?’

(5) *The reporter inquired*

Mr Howe: ‘I’ve written a fantasy book too but it hasn’t been published as yet.’

(6) *Mr Howe replied*

Reporter: ‘Are you writing anything now?’

(7) *The reporter wanted to know*

Mr Howe: ‘I am. I am writing a romance for a change.’

(8) *Mr Howe answered*

Reporter: ‘Where do you get ideas for your books from?’

(9) *The reporter asked*

Mr Howe: ‘I observe people and their behaviour very carefully and that is the best basis for my books.’

(10) *Mr Howe explained*

Reporter: ‘Do you travel much?’

(11) *The reporter asked*

Mr Howe: ‘Yes. I have been to most European countries and next year I am going to travel across Asia.’

(12) *Mr Howe replied*

Reporter: ‘Do you write your books while you travel?’

(13) *The reporter wanted to know*

Mr Howe: ‘No. I just make observations and take down important notes.’

(14) *Mr Howe answered*

Reporter: ‘Thank you very much for the interview, Mr Howe.’

(15) *The reporter*

III. Rewrite the following sentences in indirect speech.

1. ‘I was sure I hadn’t met that man before.’, said the witness.
The witness explained
2. ‘Let’s take a dog from the animal shelter.’, said Betty.
Betty suggested
3. ‘I want this report to be finished by tomorrow.’, said the boss.
The boss demanded
4. ‘Would you open the window, please?’ said the woman to me.
The woman asked
5. ‘I’ve been abducted by aliens several times.’ said the man.
The man claimed
6. ‘When will you be meeting James?’, said Fiona to me.
Fiona asked me
7. ‘Don’t forget to call the plumber.’ said my wife.
My wife reminded
8. ‘It is about time you were going to school, children.’, said Mrs Parker.
Mr Parker said
9. ‘The burglars must have known I was out.’ said the flat owner.
The flat owner said
10. ‘Who lives in the house whose roof has been blown away?’, said the fireman.
The fireman asked
11. ‘Shall I take another loan or not?’, said Ms Lloyds.
Ms Lloyds wondered
12. ‘Would you have taken the job if they had offered you a higher salary?’, said Tom.
Tom asked me
13. ‘I didn’t reveal your secret to anyone.’, said Michelle.
Michelle denied
14. ‘Have you had any better offers today?’, Sony said.
Sony asked me
15. ‘I will let you go earlier today if you come at six tomorrow.’, said our manager.
Our manager agreed

IV. Rewrite the following sentences in direct speech.

1. Eddie: ‘
- Eddie said he hadn’t revised for the exam yet.

2. Chris: ‘ ,
Chris wanted to know if he was going to get a rise the following year.
3. Gina: ‘ ,
Gina refused to sign a blank cheque.
4. Harry: ‘ ,
Harry explained that he would rather spend Christmas in the mountains.
5. Tom: ‘ ,
Tom told me he had no idea who had been sitting in my chair.
6. Jenny: ‘ ,
Jenny wanted to know how long the party had been going on when the police arrived.
7. Mr Brown: ‘ ,
Mr Brown said the trees might have been knocked over by a tornado.
8. Ellen: ‘ ,
Ellen asked whether there would be any more speeches before the unofficial part of the conference began.
9. Rick: ‘ ,
Rick told his children not to push other children.
10. Ms Franklin: ‘ ,
Ms Franklin pointed out that in the previous years the prices of food didn't use to go up so often.

7. Bezokolicznik - Infinitive

Bezokolicznik - pełny (*full infinitive*) / niepełny (*bare infinitive*)

Forma bezokolicznikowa czasownika w języku angielskim może wystąpić w kilku postaciach:

(1) pełny bezokolicznik (*full infinitive*) występujący z partykiem **to** np.

to call, to decide, to grow up, to maintain, to resign,

(2) niepełny bezokolicznik (*bare infinitive*) występujący bez partykułu **to** np.

call, decide, grow up, maintain, resign

(3) bezokolicznik forma *Continuous* np.

to be swimming, to be chopping, to be bathing, to be knitting

(4) forma dokonana bezokolicznika (*Perfect Infinitive*) np.

to have swum, to have ended, to have released, to have spoken

(5) forma dokonana bezokolicznika (*Perfect Infinitive Continuous*) np.

to have been living, to have been smiling, to have been repairing

(6) strona bierna bezokolicznika np.

to be painted, to be resumed, to be admired, to be appointed

(7) strona bierna bezokolicznika - forma dokonana (*Perfect Infinitive*) np.

to have been identified, to have been constructed, to have been hired

Sposób zastosowania zależny jest od konstrukcji zdania, czasu oraz wymaganego znaczenia. Forma bezokolicznikowa może wystąpić w zdaniu w postaci:

(1) podmiotu np.

To socialize with your neighbours is nice.

To have taken a long rest was beneficial.

To dive in this place might be risky.

Częściej jednak znaczenie takie wyrażane jest przy użyciu konstrukcji z zaimkiem **It**:

It + **be** + przymiotnik + bezokolicznik

It is nice to socialize with your neighbours.

It was beneficial to have taken a long rest.

It might be risky to dive in this place.

Niekiedy zamiast przymiotnika w konstrukcji tej można zastosować rzeczownik np.

It is a waste of time to repair that old motorbike.

It would have been a mistake to hire such an irresponsible person.

Przed zaimkiem **It** można także użyć:

podmiot + **believe/consider/discover/expect/find/think/wonder** + przymiotnik

We believe (that) it (is) necessary to make a ballot.

I find/think/consider it dangerous to swim in the river.

Joe discovered that it was impossible to sail the boat without paddles.

(2) dopełnienia np.

Forma bezokolicznikowa występuje w postaci dopełnienia po takich czasownikach, jak m.in.:

agree	fail	propose
aim	forget	prove
appear	guarantee	refuse
arrange	happen	remember
ask	hesitate	resolve
attempt	hope	seek
be able	learn	seem
be about	long	strive
bother	manage	swear
can('t) afford	neglect	tend
choose	offer	threaten
claim	plan	trouble
consent	prepare	try
decide	pretend	turn out
demand	proceed	undertake
determine	profess	volunteer
be determined	promise	vow

Prezentowane powyżej czasowniki występują w zdaniu bez dopełnienia np.

Janice appears to be an erudite young woman.

Mike isn't able to complete the task on his own.

After school, Frank decided to set up his own company.

Maggie says she's determined to learn to speak Spanish.

The sailors say they long to see their nearest and dearest.

All in all, only Damon has proved to be our true supporter.

Thousands of young people have volunteered to help with the charity action.

Czasowniki prezentowane w tabeli poniżej występują w zdaniu z dopełnieniem.

appoint	<i>expect</i>	press
advise	<i>forbid</i>	prompt
allow	<i>force</i>	provoke
<i>ask</i>	<i>get</i>	remind
<i>beg</i>	<i>help</i>	<i>request</i>
cause	<i>incite</i>	require
challenge	<i>inspire</i>	stimulate
<i>choose</i>	<i>instruct</i>	summon
command	<i>invite</i>	teach
<i>desire</i>	<i>like</i>	tell
direct	<i>lead</i>	tempt
drive	<i>mean</i>	<i>train</i>
empower	<i>oblige</i>	urge
enable	<i>order</i>	warn
encourage	<i>permit</i>	<i>want</i>
entitle	<i>persuade</i>	<i>wish</i>

Long lasting rains caused the local river to burst its banks.

It was Vincent who incited the workers to go out on strike.

My boss empowered me to take decisions on his behalf.

Our maths teacher ordered us to clean the classroom.

Thank you Joan for reminding me to phone Alan.

The gamekeeper warned us not to eat the berries.

Czasowniki wyróżnione pochyłą czcionką mogą wystąpić z dopełnieniem lub bez niego np.

The poor woman begged to see her son.

The couple begged the robbers not to do any harm to them.

I have chosen not to tell anyone what I know.

We have chosen our best consultants to do the task.

Rita expects to win the competition.

Mrs Taylor expects her children to learn languages abroad.

I didn't mean to offend anyone of you.

I didn't mean the children to see those drastic scenes.

Inne zwroty występujące z bezokolicznikiem czasownika to m.in.:

be able
be allowed
be supposed
do one's best
can't wait
make an effort
make up one's mind
take the trouble
would like
would love

*Am I supposed to wash the dishes?
We can't wait to go skiing in the Alps.
I would love to take part in the celebrations.*

Czasowniki i zwroty stosowane z niepełną formą bezokolicznika (*bare infinitive*) to:

feel, hear, notice, observe, overhear, perceive, see, sense, watch,

*Yesterday, I saw Adam kiss Mary.
Did you hear anyone knock at the door?
We noticed them exchange their briefcases.*

W stronie biernej po czasownikach tych stosuje się pełny bezokolicznik (*full infinitive*) np.

*The two men were overheard **to speak** about a planned kidnapping.
Jerry has been seen **to leave** Mary's house at night.*

Te same czasowniki mogą także wystąpić z imiesłowem czynnym (*present participle*).

Niepełny bezokolicznik stosowany jest po czasownikach modalnych:

can, could, dare, may, might, must, need, shall, should, will, would,

*We could ride on the roller coaster for free.
You mustn't enter the military area.
Need we come tomorrow, too?
Would you do it for me?*

Czasowniki **dare** oraz **need** mogą także przybierać regularną postać. W takim przypadku występują z pełną formą bezokolicznika np.

I didn't dare to disturb him. = I dared not disturb him.

You don't need to pay us now. = You need not pay us now.

Czasowniki modalne **ought** oraz **used** zawsze występują z pełną formą bezokolicznika np.

You ought to ask your superiors for permission.

We never used to fight when we were children.

Niepełna forma bezokolicznika występuje po zwrotach:

had better, would rather/sooner, rather than

You had better book tickets in advance.

Rather than sit idle, let's do something useful.

Niepełny bezokolicznik występuje także po spójnikach **but** i **except** w konstrukcji:

podmiot + **do** + **anything/everything/nothing** + **but/except**

There's nothing more we can do but wait.

You do nothing except watch TV.

Czasownik **help** może wystąpić z pełną lub niepełną formą bezokolicznika np.

Shall I help you (to) carry the suitcases?

Jason is helping us (to) arrange the furniture.

Niepełny bezokolicznik występuje po czasownikach **make/have** + ‘dopełnienie’ w stronie czynnej np.

Our teacher had/made us stay after lessons.

I will make/have him speak.

W stronie biernej w powyższym znaczeniu można użyć tylko czasownik **make**.

W tym przypadku występuje on z pełną formą bezokolicznika np.

The rebels were surrounded and were made to give in.

The ringleader was made to tell his accomplices' names.

Po czasowniku **let** stosuje się formę niepełnego bezokolicznika. W stronie biernej czasownik **let** zwykle jest zastępowany zwrotem **be allowed to** np.

*Will you let us play outdoors, mom?
The children were allowed to play outdoors.*

W zdaniu forma bezokolicznikowa może być reprezentowana przez partykuł **to**. Dzieje się tak wtedy, gdy nie istnieje konieczność powtórzenia czasownika np.

*At first he didn't want to co-operate but then he was made to.
'Did you watch the film?' 'I wanted **to**, but I fell asleep.'
'Would you like to have a walk?' 'I'd love **to**.'*

Partykuł **to** można opuścić po czasowniku **be** w zdaniach typu:

*The only thing we could do was (to) wish Tom good luck.
All I can do in this situation is (to) sit and wait.*

Konstrukcje z zastosowaniem formy bezokolicznikowej.

(1) czasownik + **what / who / how / when / where / which / why** + bezokolicznik

Czasownikami często stosowanymi z tą konstrukcją są m.in.:

arrange, ask, be sure/certain, check, choose, decide, determine, discover, discuss, establish, find out, forget, guess, have a clue, have an idea, know, learn, notice, plan, realize, remember, say, see, think, understand, wonder

*I wasn't sure how to respond to Marks' rude remark.
Have you decided where to go on winter holiday?
I don't have a clue how to switch off the machine.
Sue knew too well where to look for her husband.
We are wondering when to start the experiment.*

(2) czasownik + **whether** + bezokolicznik

Z konstrukcją tą najczęściej stosuje się czasowniki:

choose, consider, debate, decide, determine, discuss, know, remember, want/would like to know, wonder

We couldn't decide whether to rent the flat or not.

I don't know whether to appoint John or Simon for the task.

Elisabeth is wondering whether to study economics or medicine.

(3) czasownik + **for** + dopełnienie + bezokolicznik (*passive*)

Czasownikami stosowanymi z tą konstrukcją są:

appeal, apply, arrange, campaign, long, plan, wait

We have appealed for more subsidies to complete the project.

The RSPCA are campaigning for the seals to be set free.

The passenger waited for his luggage to be delivered.

I am longing for my beloved girlfriend to visit me.

(4) podmiot + **be** + przymiotnik + bezokolicznik

He's lucky to be playing in our team.

I was so glad to have seen the Pope.

The theory is not easy to memorize.

Janet is very nice to talk to.

(5) **It** + **be** + przymiotnik / rzeczownik + bezokolicznik

It is my ambition to beat the world record.

It is really hard to work and study at the same time.

It was a mistake to have hired the retired accountant.

It's beneficial to your health to do some physical exercise in the morning.

(6) **too** + przymiotnik + (rzeczownik) + bezokolicznik

You are too inexperienced to be given the job.

The poem is too long (for me) to learn by heart.

Martin is too slow a player to be put in the offence line.

Those puzzles are too difficult to be solved by a child of five.

(7) **too** + przysłówek + bezokolicznik

It's too early for me to get up.

The boy speaks too fast to be understood well.

(8) przymiotnik / przysłówka + **enough** + bezokolicznik

The figures aren't accurate enough to be taken into account.

The conditions were good enough for us to accept them.

Sarah didn't run fast enough to win the race.

Greg isn't well enough to play outside.

(9) **so** + przymiotnik + **as** + bezokolicznik

Would you be so nice as to give me Steven's phone number?

Ted was so absent-minded as to leave the front door open.

(10) forma bezokolicznikowa może wyrażać cel:

David went to Leeds to meet his client.

We're going to the theatre to watch a play.

Susan is saving money to buy a new refrigerator.

Zwrot **in order** / **so as** + 'bezokolicznik' również wyraża cel np.

We have come earlier in order to find comfortable seats.

Ralph took off the mask so as not to scare the younger children.

I'm doing a course in computer programming so as to find a better job.

(11) zdanie bezokolicznikowe może zastąpić zdanie z zaimkiem względnym:

(a) po liczebnikach porządkowych **the first**, **the second** etc. np.

He was the first who said no to the absurd conditions. =

He was the first to say / to have said no to the absurd conditions.

(b) po przymiotnikach w stopniu najwyższym np

This is the best plan that we can put into practice. =

This is the best plan to (be) put into practice.

It was the worst thing that happened to us. =

It was the worst thing to happen to us.

(c) po przysłówkach **the only**, **the last** np.

Judith is the only workmate who has backed me up. =

Judith is the only workmate to have backed me up.

He is the last candidate that was interviewed. =
He is the last candidate to have been interviewed.

(d) po rzeczownikach lub zaimkach

Is there anything that you want us to do now? =
Is there anything for us to do / to be done now?

I have a written assignment that I have to complete. =
I have a written assignment to complete.

Have you got anything that you can write with? =
Have you got anything to write with?

The inspector talked about the rules that we had to abide by. =
The inspector talked about the rules to abide by.

(12) forma bezokolicznikowa może zastąpić formę **Gerund** np.

Smoking cigarettes is bad for your health. =
It is bad for your health to smoke cigarettes.

Traveling by plane is rather expensive. =
It is rather expensive to travel by plane.

(13) forma bezokolicznikowa może być stosowana zamiast zdania ze spójnikiem **that**
(*that clauses* ⇔ 10 str. 204) np.

We have decided that we will postpone the meeting. =
We have decided to postpone the meeting.

The actor only pretends that he is dying. =
The actor only pretends to be dying.

It seems that the photocopier is out of order. =
The photocopier seems to be out of order.

People say that your brother set fire to the haystack. =
Your brother is said to have set fire to the haystack.

(14) bezokolicznik może wystąpić po takich rzeczownikach, jak m.in.:

ability	dream	proposal
aim	drive	purpose
ambition	effort	readiness
anxiety	expectation	refusal
attempt	failure	request
craving	goal	resolution
decision	hope	scheme
demand	offer	suggestion
desire	plan	willingness
determination	promise	wish

Frank's sudden decision to back out surprised us all.

It has always been my ambition to learn to ride a horse.

It is our purpose to produce high quality leather clothing.

The company's offer to buy our debts out has been rejected.

The police made an all-out effort to find the stolen limousine.

I'm sorry I can't help you realize your wish to hunt an elephant.

(15) forma bezokolicznikowa występuje z niektórymi stałymi zwrotami lub idiomami np.

To be fair to you, ...
To tell you the truth, ...
To be honest / frank, ...
To cut a long story short, ...

Forma niepełnego bezokolicznika występuje w zwrotach:

hear tell (of) = *be told*
let fly (at) = *attack*
let go = *release*
let slip = *say unintentionally*
make believe = *pretend*
make do with = *use only what one has*

To tell you the whole truth, I've been working for the intelligence.

We've run out of butter. We'll have to make do with margarine.

We don't often hear tell of such foolhardiness.

EXERCISE BANK

I. Put **to** in the gaps where necessary.

1. I have just made up my mind rearrange the furniture in my living room.
2. ‘Is this set easy assemble?’ ‘If you follow the instructions, you will manage assemble it in less than one hour.’
3. I’m sorry I can’t help you organize the barbecue. I’m really busy.
4. ‘Who was the first man step on the moon?’ ‘Let me think. tell you the truth, I don’t remember.’
5. be perfectly honest with you, it was my intention get rid of that rude employee.
6. You ought not have criticized him. Now, he may think you are against him.
7. You seem be gaining a lot of weight. I advise you stop overeating.
8. kiss a miss is awfully simple but miss a kiss is simply awful.
9. Vicky says she’s feeling lonely. She has nobody talk to.
10. I suggest you do something useful. You do nothing but lie on the couch all day round.
11. We’ve put the milk in the thermos flask in order keep it warm.
12. I would rather not buy a big house than take a mortgage that I would have pay back for the rest of my life.
13. I would like you apologize to Tina, Sam. It wasn’t nice of you say a thing like that.
14. Let’s not agree to that. The proposal of the opposition increase the food prices is certain result in social unrest.
15. I’ve seen Joan and Bob walk together in the park. They appear have made it up.
16. cut a long story short, Robbie and I used be lovers.
17. What am I supposed tell Brian if I happen see him in the afternoon?
18. The older boys threatened beat me up unless I agreed give them all my pocket money.
19. How many times have you been made work overtime this month?
20. I didn’t have a clue how help my friend. All I could do was give him a little advice.

II. Choose the correct answer or answers.

1. The doctors to resuscitate the victim of the accident.
a) managed b) failed c) did their best
2. Our German teacher often us repeat new words at loud.
a) has b) makes c) recommends
3. The building to have been hit by a falling meteorite.
a) turned out b) seemed c) appeared
4. My father me to wash his car.
a) told b) arranged c) ordered
5. I couldn't whether to take some seafood or a roast chicken.
a) appoint b) choose c) decide
6. You not have taken such great responsibility.
a) should b) need c) ought
7. The undercover officers the gang purchase a great load of cocaine.
a) expected b) observed c) provoked
8. After a long debate, the bank managers finally how to solve the current problems.
a) determined b) succeeded c) enabled
9. You to have notified everyone of the changes in the schedule.
Why didn't you do it, Charles?
a) offered b) undertook c) were
10. It was the TU leaders who the workers to down tools.
a) incited b) tempted c) resolved

III. Rewrite the sentences using the infinitive form so the meaning remains the same.

1. Everybody considers Wendy to be a talented lawyer.

Wendy

2. It seems to me that the snowman is melting.

The snowman

3. Somebody saw you copy the classified documents.

You

4. It wasn't my intention to learn to scuba dive.

I

5. Talking about your dreams at night is very pleasant.
It
6. They say that Mr Wilkins has been operated on for a brain tumour.
Mr Wilkins
7. Waiting patiently is the only thing we can do.
There is nothing more
8. Mrs Dickinson let her children eat as much ice cream as they wanted to.
Mrs Dickinson's children
9. You told these people to go out, which was rather impolite.
It was
10. They made me sign the declaration.
I

IV. Rewrite the sentences using the prompts so the meaning remains the same.

1. Eric suggested that the toxic waste should be disposed of. (SUGGESTION)
.....
2. Howard is not as important as he thinks. (PRETENDS)
.....
3. The rescuers didn't succeed in finding one of the missing fishermen. (FAILED)
.....
4. You may use our equipment freely. (FREE)
You
5. Learning all the Latin equivalents was very hard for Janice. (FOUND)
Janice
6. It is expected that the most skiers will arrive in the spa next week.
The most skiers
7. I had so little money left that I couldn't go on the trip. (AFFORD)
.....
8. You can't keep a tiger at home. They are too wild and unpredictable. (TOO)
Tigers
9. I am looking forward to meeting my American cousins. (CAN'T WAIT)
.....
10. Aunt Sue usually bursts out crying if you mention her dead son's name. (TENDS)
.....

8. Gerund

Czasownik w formie **Gerund** przybiera końówkę **-ing**, np.

driving, exploring, planning, revising, trimming, waiting

Forma **Gerund** może wystąpić w następujących postaciach:

- (1) **Gerund** np.

Jason loves reading adventure books.

They don't mind our playing in their garden.

- (2) **Perfect Gerund** - forma dokonana, opisująca czynność w czasie przeszłym, lub dokonaną wcześniej, niż inną czynność w przeszłości np.

The boy denied having stolen the picture. =

The boy denied that he had stolen the picture

- (3) **Gerund** - strona bierna (*passive*) np.

I forgot being asked to perform this piece of music.

We were honoured by being awarded the main prize.

- (4) **Perfect Gerund** - strona bierna (*passive*) np.

The man was apologized to for having been kept waiting for so long.

The clerk denied having been offered a bribe.

W zdaniu forma **Gerund** może wystąpić jako:

- (1) podmiot np.

Climbing the stairs can be exhausting.

Reading books at night may destroy your eyesight.

Finding the right woman to spend your life with is not an easy thing.

Gerund może stanowić podmiot zdania po czasownikach typu:

believe, consider, discover, expect, find, regard ... as, think

I believe that working at night is less effective. =

I believe working at night less effective.

Michael found that learning Japanese is hard. =
Michael found learning Japanese hard.

Stosując te same czasowniki oraz zachowując **Gerund** jako podmiot zdania podrzędnego można wyrazić to samo znaczenie za pomocą konstrukcji bezokolicznikowej np.

I believe working at night to be less effective.
Michael found learning Japanese to be hard.

- (2) dopełnienie po głównym czasowniku. Poniższe zestawienie prezentuje czasowniki stosowane z formą **Gerund** w postaci dopełnienia.

acknowledge	enviseage	pardon
admit	escape	postpone
advocate	excuse	practise
anticipate	fancy (= imagine)	prevent
appreciate	favour	prohibit
avoid	finish	propose (= suggest)
celebrate	foresee	recall
consider	forgive	recollect
contemplate	imagine	report
defer	include	resist
delay	involve	resume
deny	justify	risk
detest	keep	save
dislike	mean (= involve)	suffer
doubt	mention	suggest
dread	mind (= object to)	tolerate
enjoy	miss	understand

Forma **Gerund** występuje także po niektórych stałych zwrotach typu:

can't help
can't endure
can't stand
it's no good
it's no use
it's (not) worth

Fancy being as rich as Bill Gates!
I can't stand hearing Bob swear like that.
I'm afraid you can't avoid having to pay taxes.
The boy escaped being punished by telling lies.
We'll resume working when we are paid our salaries.
We kept walking in the south direction for four hours.
None of the suspects admitted having forged the money.
Somehow, I didn't recollect having met that woman before.
It's no use putting petrol in the car. The engine's broken down.
We're considering taking on more skilled employees next year.
I really miss chatting with my grandfather by the log fire at night.
You risk dying of hypothermia, if you spend too much time in icy water.

Forma **Gerund** występuje także po przyimkach, rzeczownikach, przymiotnikach lub czasownikach z przyimkami oraz po niektórych czasownikach złożonych (*phrasal verbs*). Przykładowe zwroty tego typu to m.in.:

accuse of	attempt at	accustomed to
apologize for	craving for	afraid of
blame for	danger of	fond of
consist in	fear of	good at
dream of	hope of	keen on
give up	interest in	instead of
insist on	reason for	involved in
long for	success in	responsible for
put off	trouble with	tired of

You must apologize for misbehaving.
My brother is really good at mimicking.
I'm so tired of reading these long reports.
The hope of tracking down the escaped convicts is high.
Unfortunately, we had trouble with installing the software.
Due to financial problems, we have had to put off staging the play.

Pomiędzy niektórymi czasownikami a formą **Gerund** można zastosować dopełnienie w postaci zaimka dzierżawczego, zaimka osobowego lub rzeczownika. Dzięki temu czynność opisana czasownikiem będzie odnosić się nie do podmiotu zdania, ale do dopełnienia np.

*I can't remember **you** / **your** inviting us to your birthday party.*

*The mechanic suggested **my** changing the tyres.*

*I hate **his** / **him** behaving like that.*

Inne czasowniki często stosowane z dopełnieniem oraz formą **Gerund** to:

agree to, approve of, catch, disapprove of, dislike, dread, fancy, find, forget, hate, imagine, insist on, involve, keep, like, mean, mind, notice, object to, propose, recall, recollect, remember, resent, save, send, show, stop, suggest, tolerate, understand

Do you recollect her saying that?

I can't imagine your acting as an intermediary.

The guards caught two of them trespassing the area.

We don't approve of our children's coming late home.

I don't understand their being so unwilling to co-operate.

Czasowniki **appreciate, excuse, forgive, pardon** oraz **prevent** zwykle wymagają zastosowania dopełnienia przed formą **Gerund** np.

We do appreciate your being so helpful.

I couldn't prevent her falling down.

Excuse my being late, please.

Zamiast zaimka dzierżawczego lub osobowego z niektórymi czasownikami w roli dopełnienia może wystąpić rzeczownik w formie dzierżawczej. Wyrażenie takie ma charakter formalny np.

Why do you tolerate Adam('s) being so rude?

The policeman insisted on Mr Taylor('s) getting out of his car.

Mr Jackson objected to his neighbour('s) picking fruit in his garden.

Czasowniki z przyimkiem 'to'

Szczególną uwagę warto zwrócić na czasowniki, rzeczowniki, przymiotniki oraz inne zwroty z przyimkiem **to**, po których używana jest forma **Gerund**, a nie bezokolicznik. Zasada ta dotyczy m.in.:

admit to
agree to
amount to
be accustomed to
be close to
be committed to
be/get used to
be limited/reduced to
be resigned to
be the key to
commit oneself to
devote to
feel up to
limit oneself to
look forward to
object to
resort to
swear to
take to

Hard work is the key to achieving success.

I'm sorry I don't feel up to carrying out the task.

I'm thinking of taking to practicing some martial art.

Frankly speaking, I am not accustomed to getting up at dawn.

Mrs Gallard objected to having her purse checked by the customs officer.

EXERCISE BANK

I. Choose the correct answer or answers.

1. It is believed that Nostradamus envisaged the battle of Waterloo.
a) Napoleon having lost b) Napoleon's losing c) being lost by Napoleon
2. That man has been caught a golden watch at the jeweller's.
a) having been stolen b) stealing c) being stealing
3. Is the new film by Woody Allen worth ?
a) being watched b) having watched c) watching
4. We really enjoyed to the Presidential Palace.
a) inviting b) being invited c) having been invited

5. The Navy officer was charged with with the enemy spies.
a) having collaborated b) being collaborated c) having been collaborated
6. Don't worry. You'll soon get used to about by our boss.
a) being ordering b) having ordered c) being ordered
7. Some of the inhabitants complained about not about the power cut in advance.
a) having been informed b) being informed c) having informed
8. Mike's from work seemed to have been a purposeful act carefully planned by his fiercest adversaries.
a) being sacking b) having sacked c) having been sacked
9. No matter how much money they offer, we're against a film set in our backyard.
a) they being building b) their having building c) them building
10. Some of the people have reported by aliens.
a) having been abducted b) being abducting c) being abducted

II. Complete the sentences with the appropriate verbs.

1. **denied / objected**

- a. Michael having painted the graffiti on the school wall.
- b. All of the members of the Council to having their fees reduced by thirty percent.

2. **appreciate / fancy**

- a. We don't going camping. We'd rather stay in a hotel.
- b. He's a rough type. He will never your being helpful to him.

3. **regret / apologize**

- a. The judge ordered the defendant to to his neighbour for having called him names.
- b. In fact, I not being able to attend the conference, but I've had to go away in business.

4. **mean / mind**

- a. Do you my borrowing your newspaper?
- b. Taking extra hours will your having to stay at work till late at night.

5. **avoided / missed**

- a. Fortunately, our company has making any more financial losses by being taken over by a larger exporter.
- b. We have walking in the woods and listening to birds sing ever

since we moved out to the city.

6. prevent / escape

- a. The driver swerved sharply to the right and thus managed to crashing onto the car in front.
- b. How can I my children picking up dirty words from their badly-behaved peers?

7. prefer / favour

- a. Most of us postponing the implementation of the new tax scheme till next year.
- b. Arthur is a bookworm. He's known to reading books to going to parties.

8. considering / thinking

- a. If this strong wind doesn't ease off, the organizers are calling off the ski jumping tournament.
- b. For some time, we have been of holding a referendum.

9. recalled / resumed

- a. They building the dam only when they received the subsidies.
- b. One woman having been stopped by a stranger who looked exactly like the escaped convict.

10. proposed / insisted

- a. My mother on my going to the dentist but I was so scared.
- b. There were so many visitors to the gallery that the artists keeping it open till late night.

III. Rewrite the sentences using the prompts and the appropriate form of **Gerund.**

1. The doctor advised that I should change my daily diet.
The doctor advised
2. I hate it when the children slam the door.
I can't stand
3. You may get frostbite if you don't put the gloves on.
You risk
4. The driver admitted that he had exceeded the speed limit.
The driver admitted
5. Our take-off was delayed because of the snowstorm.
The snowstorm delayed
6. People don't usually refer to me like that.
I am not accustomed to

7. We mustn't leave the camp without our guides' permission.
We are prohibited from
8. Mr Hicks allows us to pick fruit from his apple trees.
Mr Hicks doesn't mind
9. I remember that I was asked to fill in some form.
I remember
10. The cake was so good that I ate the whole of it.
The cake was so good that I couldn't resist

IV. Rewrite the sentences using the prompts and the appropriate form of **Gerund**.

1. The kids can't wait to go on holiday. (LOOK FORWARD TO)
.....
2. Carl said it wasn't him who had ruined the frying pan. (DENIED)
.....
3. In this job you have to work in shifts. (INVOLVES)
.....
4. The young man discovered that it was hard to learn to navigate. (LEARNING)
.....
5. We have decided that we will shoot the final scene at a later date. (POSTPONE)
.....
6. It's not advisable to apply the substance in low temperature. (APPLYING)
.....
7. The supervisors made the prisoners work without a break. (KEPT)
.....
8. I don't know why she should be so stubborn. (UNDERSTAND)
.....
9. Our drivers informed us that they had been stopped at the border. (REPORTED)
.....
10. The fact that he is considered a crook doesn't surprise anyone of us. (BEING)
.....

9. Bezokolicznik (*Infinitive*) - Gerund

Niektóre czasowniki mogą być stosowane zarówno z bezokolicznikiem (*Infinitive*), jak i formą **Gerund**. Do grupy tej należą m.in.:

advise	love
allow	mean
attempt	need
begin	neglect
can('t) bear	omit
cease	permit
come	plan
continue	prefer
consider	propose
deserve	recommend
fear	regret
forbid	remember
forget	require
go on	start
hate	stop
intend	try
like	want

W przypadku niektórych czasowników wybór pomiędzy bezokolicznikiem a formą **Gerund** wiąże się z koniecznością zastosowania dopełnienia lub też z istotną zmianą znaczenia np.

- (1) czasowniki **advise**, **allow**, **permit** oraz **recommend** występują z bezokolicznikiem jeżeli w zdaniu występuje dopełnienie lub z formą **Gerund** jeżeli dopełnienia nie ma np.

Janet advised/recommended us not to park the car under that tree.

Do your parents allow/permit you to smoke?

Harry advised/recommended calling the police.

They don't allow/permit bringing animals in the building.

- (2) czasowniki **begin**, **cease** oraz **continue** mogą wystąpić zarówno z bezokolicznikiem, jak i formą **Gerund** bez różnicy w znaczeniu. Jednakże forma bezokolicznikowa jest bardziej preferowana z czasownikami:

know, matter, realize, recognize, see, understand,

Just as we were about to go out, it began to rain/raining.

The enemy didn't cease to fire/firing at our positions even at night.

The question of cultural differences will soon cease to matter.

Now, I'm starting to understand what you're pointing at.

(3) czasownik **can('t) bear** może wystąpić z bezokolicznikiem lub formą **Gerund**.

np.

I can't bear to hear / hearing him tell so many lies.

We couldn't bear to stop Linda from marrying Richard.

(4) czasownik **come** z bezokolicznikiem opisuje stopniowo zachodzącą zmianę np.

Times changed and the Indians came to understand that they were now in minority.

Come z formą **Gerund** opisuje sposób poruszania się, wejścia itp. np.

The children came in slamming the door.

Ronald came running down the stairs.

(5) czasowniki opisujące uczucia lub nastawienie jak np. **dislike, like** lub **love**

mogą wystąpić zarówno z bezokolicznikiem, jak i formą **Gerund**. Jeżeli jednak wyrażona czynność ma charakter regularny, preferowaną formą jest **Gerund**, zaś w przypadku czynności pojedynczej - bezokolicznik np.

I like swimming / to swim.

We love sitting / to sit at the seashore.

Czasownik **like** występuje z bezokolicznikiem jeżeli wyraża znaczenie ‘uważać za odpowiednie/rozsądne’ np.

We like to meet and discuss things before taking important decisions. =

We consider it reasonable to meet and discuss things before

(6) czasownik **consider** występuje z dopełnieniem oraz bezokolicznikiem jeżeli wyraża pogląd odnoszący się do dopełnienia np.

Everybody considers Steven to be the best candidate. =

Steven is considered to be the best candidate.

Czasownik **consider** z formą **Gerund** oznacza ‘rozważyć, brać pod uwagę’ np.

The NASA officials are considering launching another rocket.

(7) czasownik **go on** z formą **Gerund** oznacza ‘kontynuować’ np.

Frank went on criticizing everybody although we asked him to stop.

Czasownik **go on** z bezokolicznikiem oznacza ‘przejść do następnej czynności’ np.

When she finished her speech, the Chairwoman went on to greet the guests.

(8) czasownik **hate** może wystąpić z bezokolicznikiem lub formą **Gerund** z dopełnieniem lub bez niego np.

Garry hates to do / doing the washing up.

I hate my friends to borrow / borrowing my CDs.

We hate you to smoke / smoking inside the house.

Annette hates to be / being asked private questions.

(9) czasownik **intend** występuje z bezokolicznikiem lub formą **Gerund** jeżeli w zdaniu nie ma dopełnienia. W przeciwnym razie, jedyną poprawną formą jest bezokolicznik np.

I intend to move / moving to a hot country.

We intend Mr Sykes to be in charge of the marketing department.

(10) czasownik **mean** wyrażający znaczenie ‘zamierzać, mieć na myśli’ występuje z bezokolicznikiem, zaś w znaczeniu ‘wymagać, wiązać się z’ występuje z formą **Gerund** np.

I didn't mean to offend any of you, so I'm sorry if I did.

I'd like to get the license but it means (my) having to pass another exam.

(11) czasowniki **need**, **require**, **want** wyrażające znaczenie ‘wymagać, potrzebować’ oraz czasownik **deserve** - ‘zasługiwać na’ mogą wystąpić z formą **Gerund** lub bezokolicznikiem w stronie biernej np.

Your shoes need polishing / to be polished.

The engine requires cleaning / to be cleaned.

The boy who saved the girl's life deserved being praised / to be praised.

(12) czasownik **prefer** zwykle występuje z przyimkiem **to** oraz formą **Gerund** np.

We prefer skiing to skating.

Joseph prefers telling people what to do to being told what to do.

Preferencja dotycząca jednej czynności i wyrażona przy użyciu zwrotu **should/would prefer** występuje z bezokolicznikiem np.

I'd prefer to stay at home and watch TV.

Jules would prefer to make a statement later.

W zdaniu takim może także wystąpić dopełnienie np.

*We'd prefer **you** to study medicine, James.*

*Our teacher would prefer **us** not to make so much noise.*

(13) czasownik **propose** w znaczeniu ‘zamierzać, planować’ występuje z bezokolicznikiem, zaś w znaczeniu ‘proponować, sugerować’ z formą **Gerund** np.

I propose never to get married.

We propose hiring more skilled workers.

(14) czasowniki **forget**, **remember** oraz **regret** stosowane są z bezokolicznikiem jeżeli czas wykonania czynności dopiero nastąpi lub jeżeli czynność opisana przy użyciu bezokolicznika nastąpiła później niż czynność opisana jednym z wymienionych czasowników np.

I regret to inform you that you have failed the test.

If you forget to post these letters, your boss will be furious.

I'm so sorry I didn't remember to phone Alan and tell him the news.

Te same czasowniki mogą wystąpić z formą **Gerund** jeżeli następujące po nich czasowniki opisują czynność wcześniejszą np.

I regret not going to the party but I was so busy last Friday.

I don't remember buying that jacket. It can't be mine.

(15) czasownik **start** może wystąpić zarówno z formą **Gerund**, jak i z bezokolicznikiem bez różnicy w znaczeniu. Czasownik **stop** występuje z bezokolicznikiem jeżeli wyraża cel, zaś z formą **Gerund**, gdy wyraża znaczenie całkowitego zaprzestania wykonywania określonej czynności np.

*They started playing / to play at six o'clock.
When did Jennifer stop attending your lectures?
We stopped to eat lunch and have some rest before continuing our march.*

(16) czasownik **attempt** może wystąpić z bezokolicznikiem oraz formą **Gerund** np.

The explorers attempted to determine / determining the age of the excavated ruins.

Czasownik **try** występuje z bezokolicznikiem jeżeli wyraża takie samo znaczenie jak **attempt** tj. ‘próbować’ np.

Charles tried to memorize all these dates but there were too many of them.

I have tried to learn to swim many times.

Czasownik **try** może wystąpić z formą **Gerund** jeżeli opisuje próbę - eksperyment, którego celem jest doprowadzenie do rozwiązania problemu lub poprawienia określonej sytuacji np.

If the cork won't go out, you should try breaking the top of the bottle.

PROGRESS TEST Bezokolicznik (*Infinitive*) - Gerund

I. Choose the correct answer or answers.

1. Somehow I can't imagine a house in this area.
a) Mark to build b) building c) to be building d) Mark building
2. After she retired, Mrs Hopkins committed herself to for charity.
a) work b) having worked c) being working d) working
3. Your hair looks untidy. It needs immediately.
a) being cut b) to be cut c) cut d) cutting
4. We expect the verdict soon.
a) you to disclose b) you disclosing c) being disclosed d) to disclose
5. I appreciated to the crowning ceremony.
a) them to have invited me b) being invited
c) to be invited d) having been invited
6. The young patient objected to another injection.
a) give b) being given c) have given d) be given
7. Has the gamekeeper allowed a bonfire in the woods?

- a) your making b) you make c) you to make d) making
8. The volcano is expected in about two weeks' time.
a) erupting b) to be erupted c) to erupt d) being erupted
9. under water for so long was quite an exploit even for an experienced diver as Howard.
a) To have stayed b) Being staying c) Having stayed d) Staying
10. Leave the suitcases. I'd prefer them by yourself.
a) you not to lift b) your not lifting
c) you not lift d) your not being lifting

II. Put the verbs in the correct form of either Infinitive or Gerund.

1. It's rather uncommon for the birds (build) their nests on the ground, and never have they been observed (lay) eggs in them.
2. At first, he pretended (know) nothing, but he soon turned out (be) involved in the smuggling business for many years.
3. You can't tolerate your subordinates (ignore) your commands. You must make them (carry) them out without a frown.
4. The door hinges need (grease); otherwise they will keep (creak)
5. When all conventional methods of (track) down a missing person failed, the detective resorted to (ask) a fortune-teller (locate) the person by her own means.
6. I'm still hesitating whether (let) George (go) on the camp with the older boys. Still, I'm anxious for him (learn) (cope) on his own.
7. 'If a customer refuses (pay), what am I supposed (do)?' 'In such a case, it is advisable (call) the police.'
8. It was his life in abject poverty that drove the man (start) (steal) food from the local department store.
9. The burglar admitted (break) into Mrs Newton's house but he denied (threat) (kill) her.
10. William's decision (become) an actor didn't quite appeal to his father who had always hope his son (become) a veterinary surgeon like himself.
11. The man claims (gain) possession of the secret files by accident, but to me the files seem (trade) illegally by one of the Ministry officials.

12. You must think hard before (invest) your money as you always risk (lose) it if your investments fail (generate) the expected income.
13. After (rescue) the drowning woman's life, Stanley certainly deserves (call) a hero.
14. If you neglect (overhaul) the machinery regularly it is sure (stop) (function) well.
15. Before (put) our plan into practice, none of us had anticipated (come) across such horrible difficulties.
16. Because we couldn't bear (smell) the nearby tobacco factory fumes, we resolved (move) to a place with much cleaner air.
17. 'My boss has arranged for me (go) on a seminar in Vancouver, which means my (have) to travel by plane.' 'Perhaps he doesn't know you are scared of (fly).'
18. The draught sent all my documents (fly). I had just forgotten (close) the window before (open) the door.
19. The young jockey aims (win) the next great race. He has made a great effort (return) to racing after the unfortunate fall he had last summer.
20. I recommend your (not pay) so much attention to small problems. Only when you learn how (not make) a mountain out of a molehill, will all these worries cease (trouble) you.

III. Put the verbs in the correct form of either Infinitive or Gerund.

The boys had been looking forward to (go) on the trip for months when I finally told them (start) (get) ready. So many times had I delayed our (set) out on the great adventure that they seemed (not believe) me. But now that our visas had been validated and the Chinese authorities had eventually allowed us (travel) to the most remote corners of their country, we could commence (prepare) for this unusual experience. Firstly, I had to face again the challenging task of (persuade) the boys' parents (trust) me. As their sons' teacher and leader, I was well used to (do) the same kind of convincing each time I planned (take) their darlings on a long and exhausting expedition with me.

On the morning of August 12th, we found ourselves (wait) for an international flight to Beijing. Listening to the boys (chat) about their hopes and expectations I could hear a note of excitement mixed with anxiety, so I made up my mind (try) (ease) the mounting tension a bit, which in fact turned out (be) quite an undertaking. In their minds the boys envisaged (experience) the most incredible and thrilling adventures and couldn't wait (perform) the most daring feats one could think of. My knowledge of an experienced adventure seeker enabled me (see) the things that were about (come) in a totally different light. I understood that an expedition like this required (keep) my nerves and emotions under control to avoid (expose) myself and my little companions to any unnecessary risks.

Just the thought of (have to) (cross) the deep and swift-flowing river made my flesh (creep). Never before had I been forced (make) an endeavour like this, but since it was my own idea (take) the harder route, I knew I couldn't now (show) a sign of the great distress that I was experiencing at that moment. I knew too well that the boys considered me (be) their mental and spiritual leader and that if I mentioned (give up) (cross) the river, it would mean (display) my all weaknesses in the most explicit way. It took me a moment (pluck up) enough courage and (take) one of the riskiest decisions in my whole life.

IV. Rewrite the sentences using the prompts and the correct form of either Infinitive or Gerund.

1. Do you remember that you told Richard to move out? (RECOLLECT)

.....

2. You and your friends may swim in my pool. (MIND)

I

3. It seemed to me that the doctor had prescribed the wrong medicine.

The doctor seemed

4. We have decided that we will not make another performance. (DECISION)

.....

5. I just had to ask him that question.

I couldn't resist

6. It's a waste of time to watch this boring comedy. (NOT WORTH)

7. It was very kind of Joseph to lend us the money.

We appreciated

8. The Australian swimmer didn't succeed in beating the world record. (FAILED)

9. I haven't seen my children for so long.

I'm longing

10. Can one smoke in the laboratory?

Do they allow

11. If you park here, you will have to buy a parking ticket. (MEANS)

Parking here

12. The young man says he'd rather deliver letters than sort them.

The young man prefers

13. No matter how hard you try, you will not convince Sarah.

It's no use

14. If I were you, I would forget about the boy as quickly as possible.

I recommend

15. People don't usually call me by my second name. (ACCUSTOMED)

16. It appeared that the car had been stolen a week earlier.

The car appeared

17. I do want my employees to wear the badges.

I insist

18. In her later life Ms Diamond helped the poor and homeless.

Ms Diamond devoted

19. Someone overheard them say that they were going to rob a bank.

They

20. The official confirmed that he had been offered a bribe.

The official acknowledged

10. Zdania dopełnieniowe ze spójnikiem *that* - That clauses

Niektóre czasowniki stosowane z bezokolicznikiem (*infinitive*) oraz/lub formą **Gerund** mogą także wystąpić ze spójnikiem **that** wprowadzającym zdanie dopełnieniowe (*that clause*). Poniższe zestawienie prezentuje czasowniki często stosowane ze spójnikiem **that**.

acknowledge	<i>find out</i>	recognize
admit	<i>forget</i>	recommend
advise	<i>guarantee</i>	remark
agree	<i>guess</i>	<i>remember</i>
announce	<i>happen</i>	remind
appear	<i>hear</i>	request
<i>arrange</i>	<i>hope</i>	resolve
<i>ask</i>	<i>imagine</i>	<i>reveal</i>
assume	<i>imply</i>	<i>say</i>
assure	<i>indicate</i>	<i>see</i>
beg	<i>inform</i>	seem
<i>believe</i>	<i>insist</i>	sense
calculate	<i>know</i>	<i>show</i>
confess	<i>learn</i>	<i>state</i>
confirm	<i>Maintain</i>	<i>suggest</i>
<i>consider</i>	<i>mean</i>	suppose
<i>declare</i>	<i>notice</i>	suspect
<i>decide</i>	<i>observe</i>	teach
demand	<i>occur to</i>	<i>tell</i>
demonstrate	<i>order</i>	<i>think</i>
determine	<i>perceive</i>	threaten
discover	<i>presume</i>	turn out
doubt	<i>pretend</i>	<i>understand</i>
<i>estimate</i>	<i>promise</i>	urge
expect	<i>propose</i>	vow
fear	<i>prove</i>	warn
feel	<i>realize</i>	wish
<i>find</i>	<i>reckon</i>	<i>wonder</i>

I am going to prove that I am innocent.
Eric admitted that he had used my mobile phone.
Janet was only pretending that she was feeling unwell.
It appears that the expedition will take longer than expected.
The dog may not understand that you want it to fetch the stick.
If the police discover that you are here, they may try to catch you.

Czasowniki oznaczone pochyłą czcionką często występują z zaimkami **wh-** w roli spójników np.

*Do you know **what** to do now?*
*Susan's wondering **which** pullover to buy.*
*I hope you won't forget **who** offered you support.*
*We've found out **why** there was the problem with the aerial.*

Niektóre czasowniki występujące ze spójnikiem **that** mogą wymagać zaimka **It** w roli podmiotu zdania. Do grupy tej należą:

appear, happen, occur to, seem, turn out

It appears that Diane likes you a lot.
It happened that the hot boiler exploded.
It seems to me that Sean doesn't remember me.
It turned out that the committee member had accepted a bribe.

Po niektórych czasownikach stosuje się konstrukcję:

that + podmiot + (should)

Do grupy tej należą m.in.:

agree, arrange, beg, command, decide, demand,
determine, insist, order, propose, resolve, suggest, urge

I agree that Mrs Townsend (should) be sued.
Frank insists that I (should) report to him every day
We demand that the ordered goods (should) be wrapped in paper.

Zdanie dopełnieniowe z **that** może także wystąpić w roli podmiotu np.

That Robert and Angela are engaged is a well-known fact.
That you should have called him a fool was a shame.

EXERCISE BANK

I. Rewrite the following sentences using *that* clauses.

1. Joe seems to have discovered what we're being up to.

It

2. The team are said to be losing their popularity.

People

3. Mary recommended my respecting the principles.

.....

4. Thomas has promised to keep in touch with the headquarters.

.....

5. Alice denied having received a love letter from Daniel.

.....

6. I will never forget you standing by me.

.....

7. The factory is said to discharge effluent into the local river.

Everybody

8. We hope our son to become a successful lawyer.

.....

9. Jerry advised me to write a complaint.

.....

10. The actress was believed to have had a love affair with the President.

People

II. Fill the gaps with the appropriate verbs in the correct form.

**appear assure establish fear guess
insist occur realize remember wish**

1. Sony just (not) that he had agreed to play music at the party and that's why he didn't turn up.
2. I was still hesitating but the scholar me that the experiment was absolutely safe.
3. It was the fifth time I saw the man that day and at that moment I that I was being followed.

4. The opposition party keep that the prime minister should hand in his resignation this week.
5. When I saw the huge amount of the paper work to be done I that I had never agreed to do the job.
6. I haven't seen you here before. I that you're a new consultant.
Am I right?
7. It to me that the terms of the agreement do not quite appeal to our business partners.
8. The police have that the man who mugged the elderly lady wasn't older than thirty.
9. Janice was wondering what to cook for the party when it to her that she might call a catering company.
10. We don't have enough money to keep the project going. I really that it may collapse soon.

11. Imiesłowy - The participles

W języku angielskim imiesłówów może przybierać następujące formy:

(1) imiesłów czynny - **present participle** np.

barking, fighting, moving, sailing, smiling

(2) imiesłów bierny - **past participle** np.

attached, broken, discovered, omitted, replaced,

(3) imiesłów bierny forma dokonana - **perfect participle** np.

strona czynna: *having announced, having repaired, having watched*

strona bierna: *having been removed, having been dissolved*

11.1. Imiesłów czynny - The present participle

Imiesłów czynny jest stosowany:

(a) w czasach *Continuous* np.

I am reading a newspaper. Joe has been talking on the phone.

(b) w funkcji przymiotnika np.

a speeding car a moving object falling rocks dancing couples

(c) po czasownikach: **be busy, come, go, spend, waste** np.

When are you going fishing?

Uncle Terry is busy repairing his old motorbike.

You're wasting your time trying to convince Sally.

(d) po czasownikach:

**catch, feel, find, hear, leave, listen to, notice,
observe, overhear, see, smell, watch**

Janet left the two of us arguing.

I heard them talking about you and me.

The boy was caught peeping through the keyhole.

Yesterday, Mike saw Mr Grey stealing fruit from our garden.

The officers were overhearing the mobsters planning a robbery.

(e) zamiast zdania z zaimkiem względnym np.

A calculator that belongs to me = A calculator belonging to me.

He is the one who offers his support. = He is the one offering his support.

They are the workers who ask for a rise. = They are the workers asking for a rise.

(f) zamiast zdania nadrzednego w przypadku, gdy dwie lub więcej czynności wykonywanych jest jednocześnie lub, gdy kolejna czynność stanowi część lub wynika z pierwszej czynności np.

She touched his lips and realized he was not breathing. =

Touching his lips she realized he was not breathing.

The men looked around and put on the balaclavas. =

Looking around, the men put on the balaclavas.

He called his students fools and he offended them all. =

He called his students fools, offending them all.

Vicky rushed out of the room and slammed the door. =

Vicky rushed out of the room, slamming the door.

Checąc podkreślić fakt, iż pierwsza czynność została zakończona zanim nastąpiła kolejna czynność, można zastosować imiesłów dokonany w postaci strony czynnej lub biernej np.

When we had reached the peak, we stopped to have a rest. =
Having reached the peak, we stopped to have a rest.

After I had assembled the set, I had fixed it to the wall. =
Having assembled the set, I fixed it to the wall.

Takie zastosowanie imiesłowu czynnego dość rzadko występuje w mowie potocznej.
Jest ono charakterystyczne dla języka pisaneego.

(g) zamiast zdania podrzednego w postaci: ‘**As / Because / Since** + podmiot’ np.

As I was sure they weren’t going to harm me, I ... =
Being sure they weren’t going to harm me, I ...

Because we didn’t belong to the same party, we ... =
Not belonging to the same party, we ...

Since she knew her rights well, she ... =
Knowing her rights well, she ...

Zdanie imiesłowowe może posiadać odrębny podmiot np.

There being too big a crowd, we decided to come the following day.
The night being dark, the walkers could easily lose their way.

(h) po czasowniku **have** wyrażającym znaczenie ‘naklonić, kazać, sprawić że itp.’ np.

Tom had his children doing homework in their rooms.
Soon, I will have all of you speaking English in the class.
If you don’t change your approach, you’ll have everybody criticizing you.

11.2. Imiesłów bierny - The past participle

Imiesłów bierny jest stosowany:

(a) w czasach *Perfect* oraz w stronie biernej np.

Have you confirmed the booking yet?
I had closed my bank account by then
Mr Dawson is said to have been sacked.
These boots are made of genuine leather.
Frank is being interviewed by the police.

(b) w funkcji przymiotnika np.

a released prisoner a broken tile retired workers forged money

(c) zamiast zdania w stronie biernej np.

*He was infuriated by the youths and he started to shout at them. =
Infuriated by the youths, he started shouting at them.*

*Because she was misinformed by the salesman, she went to complain. =
Misinformed by the salesman, she went to complain.*

*Acid rains destroyed the soil and so it was infertile. =
Destroyed by acid rains, the soil was infertile.*

Niekiedy, aby uniknąć nieporozumienia lub podkreślić, że czynność wyrażona przy pomocy imiesłowu została zakończona zanim nastąpiła kolejna czynność, można zastosować dokonaną formę imiesłowu, również w postaci strony biernej np.

*After he had been interviewed by the police, the witness went home. =
Having been interviewed by the police, the witness went home.*

*When I had been operated on, my condition started to improve. =
Having been operated on, my condition started to improve.*

Formę **having + past participle** stosuje się także, gdy czynność była wykonywana przez dłuższy okres czasu np.

*Having spoken for three hours, the chairman felt exhausted.
Having studied the whole night, Gillian memorized all the items.*

EXERCISE BANK

I. Rewrite or connect the following sentences using the appropriate participle form.

1. I came back home and I realized it had been broken into.

.....

2. Frank is an experienced manager. He knows how to approach the task.

.....

3. As I had been stopped by the police, I didn't get in time for the performance.

4. The buildings that require to be renovated are on the list.

.....

5. Sarah signed the agreement and said its terms didn't appeal to her at all.

.....

6. The river burst its banks and flooded the small mountain village.

.....

7. As we didn't expect to come across any more trouble, we resumed the research.

.....

8. Eva opened the window and she heard her neighbours who were talking about her.

.....

9. Tina was terrified of the darkness and decided not to go down the cave.

.....

10. When they had set up the camp, the climbers started discussing their next move.

.....

11. The marines who are being considered for the task are all well-trained.

.....

12. Susan smiled at her boss as she didn't want to show a sign of irritation.

.....

13. The cyclist who was run down by a lorry is being treated in the local hospital.

.....

14. Because he was annoyed with the delay, Mick complained aloud.

.....

15. The guests had been given a warm welcome. Next, they were shown to their rooms.

.....

II. Put the verbs in the correct participle form.

1. (recover) from the wounds, the patient left hospital
..... (express) his gratitude for the great care he received.

2. The young woman (apply) for the secretarial job says she's not afraid of (challenge) tasks.

3. (warn) of the slippery road by the policeman, I drove carefully (not exceed) the speed of 30 kph.

4. (ask) by one of the reporters about his plans, the minister responded he was busy (prepare) the new reforms.

5. There (be) many attractive retail sales downtown, Gina and her mother went (look) for bargains.
6. (collect) the (order) wedding rings from the jeweller's store, I noticed they were not the right size.
7. (have) nothing to lose, the Italian swimmer agreed to make an attempt at beating the world record (set) by a German swimmer in 1998.
8. (pass) by the bank, the man noticed two (mask) men (terrorize) the bank workers inside.
9. (alarm) by his high blood pressure and his heart (beat) irregularly, Mr Johnson called an ambulance.
10. (bore) with the lecture, some students left the room (not ask) the professor for permission.
11. The protesters (occupy) the factory area have been said they are wasting their time (try) to achieve the impossible.
12. The books (borrow) from the university library must be returned within two weeks.
13. (work) in the assembly department for fifteen years and (acquaint) with all the tricks of the trade, Mr Grant was chosen to instruct the young and inexperienced workers.
14. (interest) in the talk, Elisabeth sat in the back row (prick up) her ears all the time.
15. (find out) that her husband had cheated on her several times, Judith decided to ask for a divorce (promise) herself never to get married again.

12. Zdania względne - Relative clauses

12.1. Zdanie względne definiujące. - Defining relative clause.

Zdania względne definiujące zawierają informację opisującą daną osobę lub rzecz, dzięki czemu wiadomo, do której osoby lub rzeczy odnosi się czasownik w zdaniu głównym. W zdaniach względnych definiujących można zastosować trzy rodzaje zaimków względnych:

who – odnosi się do osób oraz rzeczy
that – odnosi się do osób oraz rzeczy
which – odnosi się do rzeczy

W zdaniach definiujących zaimki **who** oraz **that** mogą być stosowane zamiennie w odniesieniu do osób. Zaimki **which** oraz **that** mogą być stosowane zamiennie w odniesieniu do rzeczy. W zdaniach tego typu nie stosuje się przecinków przed zaimkami względnymi oraz po nich np.

We need people who/that are not afraid of taking risks.

Students who/that attend my lectures are always well prepared.

The money that/which Charles was paid was not as big as he expected.

W odniesieniu do osób szczególnych lub bliżej określonych częściej stosowanym zaimkiem względnym jest **who** np.

The priest who celebrated the mass is not from our parish.

The man who offered to give me a lift is my friend's father.

Zaimek wzrokowy **that** jest formą bardziej preferowaną od **who** oraz **which** jeżeli:

- (a) podmiot poprzedzony jest przyniemiem w stopniu najwyższym np.

Julia is the most intelligent student that I have ever had.

These are the most expensive apartments that we have ever lived in.

- (b) podmiot ma postać zaimka nieokreślonego np.

Everything that he has told you is a pack of lies.

There was nobody that I could ask for help.

That's all that we can do for you.

- (c) podmiot poprzedzony jest liczebnikiem porządkowym np.

This is the third time that I have experienced something like this.

Who was the first man that stepped on the moon?

W zdaniu wzrokowym definiującym zaimek wzrokowy można opuścić jeżeli występuje on w funkcji dopełnienia. Oznacza to, iż po zaimku wzrokowym znajduje się osobny podmiot zdania wzrokowego np.

Sam was the nicest person (that/who) we met in the USA.

Did he explain to you the theory (that/which) you didn't understand?

W zdaniu wzrokowym definiującym, w którym znajduje się tylko jeden podmiot zaimka wzrokowego opuścić nie można np.

*I've seen **the man** who stole your briefcase.
I prefer **tasks** which don't exhaust me so much.*

Zaimek względny w funkcji dopełnienia.

Zaimek względny **whom** występuje w funkcji dopełnienia osobowego w zdaniach formalnych. W mowie potocznej zwykle zastępuje go zaimek **who** lub **that** np.

*The boy (whom/who/that) I talked to was from my school.
The person (whom/who/that) we asked for help was a stranger.*

Zaimki **which** lub **that** występują z dopełnieniem nieosobowym np.

*The books (which/that) I bought didn't cost much.
The keys (which/that) your baby is playing with aren't mine.*

Zaimek względny z przyimkiem.

Jeżeli przyimek zajmuje miejsce przed zaimkiem względnym (konstrukcja formalna), wówczas stosuje się zaimek **whom** (w odniesieniu do osób) oraz **which** (w odniesieniu do rzeczy). W takiej konstrukcji zaimka względnego opuścić nie można np.

*The man **to whom** I have complained is the restaurant manager.
The money **with which** the gangsters paid came from a robbery.*

Najczęściej jednak przyimek będzie zajmował miejsce po orzeczeniu. W takim przypadku można użyć zaimek względny **who**, **whom** lub **that** (w odniesieniu do osób) oraz **which** lub **that** (w odniesieniu do rzeczy). Konstrukcja taka ma charakter nieformalny, zaś zaimek względny można opuścić np.

*The man (who/whom/that) I have complained **to** is the restaurant manager.
The money (which/that) the gangsters paid **with** came from a robbery.*

Jeżeli orzeczenie ma postać czasownika złożonego - przechodniego (*transitive phrasal verb*), występującego z jednym lub dwoma przyimkami, w zdaniu względnym przyimki te zwykle będą zajmowały miejsce po orzeczeniu, a nie przed zaimkiem względnym np.

*He is the child (who/that) I am **looking after**.
These are the parts (that/which) the mechanism is **made up of**.*

Zaimek względny - forma dzierżawcza.

W odniesieniu do osób, zaimkiem względnym stosowanym w formie dzierżawczej jest **whose** np.

The people whose houses have been destroyed will be paid damages.

I have heard of a man whose four children are all geniuses.

W odniesieniu do rzeczy zaimkiem względnym w formie dzierżawczej jest **whose** np.

This is the church whose steeple was destroyed by the enemy bomb.

We hired a cottage whose windows overlooked south.

W przypadku rzeczowników ‘nieożywionych’ funkcję zaimka względnego w formie dzierżawczej mogą także spełniać zwroty:

the + rzeczownik + of which lub **with + rzeczownik**

He used a ladder the rungs of which / whose rungs were broken.

He used a ladder with broken rungs.

He carried a gun the butt of which / whose butt was engraved.

He carried a gun with an engraved butt.

Zaimki ‘where’, ‘when’, ‘why’ oraz ‘whereby’ w funkcji zaimków względnych.

Zaimek **where** może zastępować **at/in/on + which** w zdaniu względnym np.

This is the town in which / where we met.

The station at which / where the bomb exploded is in the city centre.

Zaimek **when** może zastąpić **at/by/in/on + which** np.

The day on which / when it happened was Sunday.

I will never forget the time at which / when I was so happy.

Zaimek **why** może wystąpić zamiast **for which** po rzeczowniku **reason** np.

The reason for which / why the prime minister resigned is still unknown.

Zaimek **whereby** może zastąpić zwroty przyimkowe **by which means / by which according to which** np.

The army are planning to reform their methods of recruiting whereby / by means of which they accept many unfit recruits.

12.2. Zdanie względne nie-definiujące. - Non-defining relative clause.

Zdanie względne nie-definiujące stanowi dodatkową informację dotyczącą podmiotu zdania. Informacja ta nie jest niezbędna dla poprawności zdania głównego, stąd jest ona oddzielona od niego przecinkami np.

Mr Thomas, whose son teaches me mathematics, is the headmaster.

W rzeczywistości powyższe zdanie względne można pominąć bez szkody dla znaczenia zdania głównego lub też można wyrazić je jako osobne zdanie np.

Mr Thomas is the headmaster. His son teaches me mathematics.

W zdaniu względnym nie-definiującym przecinków nie można pominąć. Nie można także opuścić zaimków względnych.

Zdania względne nie-definiujące zwykle nie występują w mowie potocznej. Ich złożona konstrukcja charakterystyczna jest dla formalnego języka pisaneego.

Zaimki względne stosowane w zdaniach nie-definiujących to:

who / whom / whose - w odniesieniu do osób

which / whose / of which - w odniesieniu do rzeczy

Zaimek względny w funkcji podmiotu.

W odniesieniu do osób w funkcji podmiotu stosuje się zaimek **who** np.

Howard Grace, who is our best forward, has been injured badly.

Ms Edison, who lives next door, never cleans the staircase.

We invited the Greys, who are our in-laws.

W odniesieniu do rzeczy w funkcji podmiotu stosuje się zaimek **which** np.

The church, which was built in the 16th century, is the oldest building in our town.

The Titanic, which sunk on April 14, 1912, was on its maiden voyage.

We buy the Newsletter, which is a daily.

Zaimek względny w funkcji dopełnienia.

W odniesieniu do osób w funkcji dopełnienia stosuje się zaimek **whom** lub **who** w języku potocznym np.

Nicolas, whom I met on my business trip to Taiwan, works for a consulting agency. The reporter made an interview with Mrs Lean, whom the kidnappers had set free.

W odniesieniu do rzeczy w funkcji dopełnienia stosuje się zaimek **which** np.

This computer game, which the boys love to play, can exert a bad influence on them. Alex showed us his golden watch, which he had inherited from his grandfather.

Zaimek względny w funkcji dopełnienia po czasowniku z przyimkiem.

W odniesieniu do osób, w funkcji dopełnienia z przyimkiem, który zajmuje miejsce przed zaimkiem względnym, stosuje się postać **whom** np.

*Ronald, for whom I've been waiting, has promised not to come late.
Sarah, to whom I was speaking, is my new personal assistant.*

Powyzsza konstrukcja ma wydźwięk formalny. W zdaniach mniej formalnych przyimek zajmuje miejsce po orzeczeniu, zaś zaimek względny ma wówczas postać **who** lub **whom** np.

*Brian, who we have co-operated with, is a top class specialist.
Mr Wilson, whom I can always depend on, has never let me down.*

W odniesieniu do rzeczy, w funkcji dopełnienia z przyimkiem, który zajmuje miejsce przed zaimkiem względnym, stosuje się postać **which** np.

*The Royal crown, at which you are looking now, was made in the 14th century.
This new camera, with which I've taken the photos, cost me a fortune.*

W konstrukcji nieformalnej przyimek można umieścić po czasowniku. Zaimek względny ma wówczas także postać **which** np.

*The ornamented pen, which she wrote with, was a gift from the Emperor himself.
The guitar, which the millionaire paid so much for, once belonged to Elvis Presley.*

Większość czasowników złożonych z przyimkami (*phrasal verbs*) jest nierozdzielna. Stąd w zdaniu z zaimkiem względnym przyimek zawsze będzie zajmował miejsce za orzeczeniem np.

*Peter, who I have always looked up to, is my cousin from Glasgow.
Mary's dog, which I look after whenever she is out of town, has bit me twice.*

Zaimek względny - forma dzierżawcza.

W odniesieniu do osób stosuje się zaimek **whose** np.

*The prince, whose beloved wife died in a plane crash, is said to be in deep depression.
We have talked to Mrs Teasley, whose baby has been diagnosed with the same illness.*

W odniesieniu do rzeczy stosuje się zaimek **whose** lub **the + rzeczownik + of which** np.

*The plane, whose one engine had gone wrong, landed on a farmer's field.
The hawk, the eyesight of which is so acute, can see its prey from a distance of 1 km.*

Zaimki względne złożone.

Zaimki względne złożone z:

all / both / each / either / many / most / neither / none / part / some / a number etc.
+
of whom lub of which

mogą być stosowane w zdaniach względnych nie-definiujących. Do grupy wymienionych powyżej zaimków oraz rzeczowników należą także liczebniki porządkowe oraz przymiotniki w stopniu najwyższym np.

The police arrested eight people, all of whom had taken part in the demonstration.

The explorers have found ancients coins, many of which are of gold and silver.

I talked to a few natives, none of whom knew where the place was.

Sue has dated six boyfriends, the first of whom she loved the most.

We've read all his books, the best of which is the latest one.

12.3. Zdania względne łączące. - Connective relative clause.

Zdania względne łączące stanowią kontynuację lub komentarz do myśli lub informacji zawartej w zdaniu głównym. Zaimkami stosowanymi w takich zdaniach są:

who, whom, which oraz whose

Zdanie główne jest oddzielone od zdania względnego łączącego przecinkiem np.

Ryan said the story was nonsense, which wasn't a nice thing to say.

We chose Adam, whose innovative ideas appealed to us the most.

I gave this letter to Lisa, who gave it to her sister.

Niekiedy różnica pomiędzy zdaniem łączącym, a zdaniem nie-definiującym jest niewielka lub trudna do zauważenia, co nie powinno stanowić szczególnego kłopotu, ponieważ znaczenie wyrażone poprzez obydwie formy pozostaje takie samo.

Należy zwrócić szczególną uwagę na zastosowanie zaimka **which**, który w zdaniach łączących odnosi się do informacji zawartej w zdaniu głównym. Dość często jest on mylony z zaimkiem **what**, który nie odwołuje się do informacji zawartej w zdaniu głównym, a jedynie wyraża znaczenie zbliżone do: '**the thing(s) that**' np.

The date of the conference has been changed again, which annoys me a lot.

Frank took the children to the zoo, which made them happy.

What made me angry was the waiter's arrogance.

Don't ever ignore what I tell you.

Zdania względne z zaimkami whoever, whatever, whenever, wherever etc.

Zaimki typu **whoever, whatever, whichever, whenever, wherever** oraz **however** mogą rozpoczynać zdanie względne odnoszące się do osób lub rzeczy bliżej nieokreślonych np.

Whoever wins the competition will become a millionaire.

Whichever of them gets the job doesn't matter to me.

I can meet you wherever and whenever it suits you.

I will complete the task, however difficult it is.

He says he can do whatever we tell him to.

12.4. Zdania względne rozdzielone - Cleft sentences

Zdanie względne rozdzielone służy do wyszczególnienia osoby lub rzeczy, do której odnosi się informacja zawarta w zdaniu względnym. Konstrukcja taka ma następującą strukturę:

It + be + rzeczownik / zaimek + zdanie względne definiujące

Zaimki względne stosowane są według takich samych zasad, jakie obowiązują w przypadku zdań względnych definiujących np.

It was James that I asked to be my best man.

It was Helen who made the suggestion.

It was milk soup that I hated as a child.

It is time and money that we need.

EXERCISE BANK

I. Read the following sentences and put **D** for a defining relative clause or **ND** for a non-defining relative clause.

1. Mr Richards, who you have just spoken to, is a member of the opposition party.
2. There were quite a few problems that none of us had had to deal with before.
3. Prague, where we went to for the first time on our honeymoon, made an impression of a cosmopolitan city.
4. In his room upstairs, the man used to keep numerous objects of historic value, all of which came from excavations in Egypt.
5. I'm really sick of you giving me nonsensical excuses in which there's not a grain of truth.
6. The candidates whose application forms will not be delivered by the end of the next week will not be considered for the position.
7. Whenever moodiness and hopelessness struck me, I would go to my grandmother, who would know how to alleviate my sorrows.
8. A number of improvements and corrections will have to be introduced in the projects which are to be completed by the end of this year.
9. Roger McAllister, whom we have always trusted so much, turned out to have been a mole for over six years.
10. We have received a delivery of one hundred spare parts, none of which is the one that we originally ordered.

II. Complete the sentences with the appropriate relative pronouns.

1. Robert, duty it was to monitor the premises, fell asleep and thus let the burglars do their job.
2. The city in the Pharaoh ruled doesn't exist any more.
3. Our literature teacher often uses Latin phrases we don't know or understand.
4. Anyone is willing to be a blood donor is welcome to visit our hospital laboratory from Monday to Saturday.
5. Jack said he wasn't going to support us any more, was not the thing we had expected to hear from him.

6. As usual, our annual meeting is going to take place in Ontario, there is our main office.
7. The encyclopedia, for so many clients have asked this month, is out of stock.
8. According to the recent study, teenagers spend too much time watching thrillers and action films can be more aggressive.
9. Stan Laurel and Oliver Hardy, went down in history as the most popular comic duo, played together in more than ten films.
10. It is pasta forms the basis of this delicious salad.
11. The Colorado River, previous name was the Grand River, was also called the Hamilton River.
12. Just as I was leaving the office I saw my boss, told me there was one more assignment he wanted me to do that day.
13. Much as I respect you, I don't agree with your opinion, is why I have decided to reject your proposition.
14. The software we have been using since the beginning of the year is less effective than the one we used previously.
15. A chronic lack of money, Nina has always put her unhappiness down to, has never been the real problem. she has always lacked is a true love.

III. Join the pairs of sentences into defining relative clauses.

1. We have incurred losses. They amount to over one million pounds.
.....
2. Over sixty artists took part in the charity concert. The concert was organized in Manchester last September.
.....
3. The stream was rather deep. We had to cross it.
.....
4. Pete apologized to the girl. He had mistaken her for his former girlfriend.
.....
5. I've got acquainted with a boy. His parents are both of Indian origin.
.....
6. Is Sally going to pay for the damage? She's caused the damage to a stranger's car.
.....
7. That is the boy. The younger children are afraid of him.
.....

8. They tried to rob a man at night. The man turned out to be a karate master.

.....

9. I saw the place on the photo. It looked exactly like the place I came from.

.....

10. The foreigners made a complaint. Their luggage hadn't been delivered on time.

.....

IV. Join the pairs of sentences into non-defining relative clauses.

1. Joanna Parker has been transferred from the accounting department to the marketing department. She found it hard to cope with doing the accounts.

.....

2. I've heard Chris is being sacked this month. We have always had to put up with his extravagancies.

.....

3. Before her death, the elderly woman disclosed the family secret. She had guarded the secret for over fifty years.

.....

4. The Pope lives in Vatican. Vatican is the smallest independent country in the world.

.....

5. The French climbers were picked up by a helicopter. Several of them suffered from acute frostbite.

.....

6. We rely on David. He has never abandoned us in trouble.

.....

7. The foreign guests were accommodated in a luxury hotel. The hotel is owned by one of the ministers' wife.

The luxury hotel

8. Mr Gordon has been in high spirits. His wife gave a birth to a son last night.

.....

9. There are not more than fifty of the eagles. All of them can only be seen in zoos.

.....

10. We have been considering Christine for the managerial post. She is a skilled and talented employee.

Christine,

V. Transform the following sentences into defining or non-defining relative clauses.

1. The storm may not subside so fast. This is what I am afraid of the most. (WHICH)

.....

2. We ordered pine desks, not chestnut ones. (THAT)

It

3. The villa whose walls are painted pink belongs to a local eccentric. (WHICH)

.....

4. The morning when the war broke out was sunny and hot. (IN)

.....

5. Simon is not making much progress at school. It worries me a lot. (WHICH)

.....

6. Eddie, by whom we were invited, started working for the firm last week. (WHO)

.....

7. Paul's ignorant manner makes my blood boil.

What

8. We have now over eighty employees and most of them are below thirty. (WHOM)

.....

9. I will stand by you no matter what happens. (WHATEVER)

.....

10. What was the reason why Ms Lackey resigned? (FOR)

.....

11. Were you the last person to have seen the woman alive? (THAT)

.....

12. Venice, the streets of which are often flooded, is located in a lagoon. (WHOSE)

.....

13. What they need is a safe place to settle down in. (WHERE)

.....

14. Michael has scored the most points, not you. (WHO)

It is

15. The obstacles hindering the research are not easy to overcome. (THAT)

.....

13. Zdania okolicznikowe czasowe - Adverbial time clauses

Zdania okolicznikowe czasowe rozpoczynają się od spójników:

after	once
as	since
as long as	the minute (that)
as soon as	the moment (that)
before	the next time
by the time	the sooner
hardly ... when / before	till / until
immediately	when
no sooner ... than	whenever
now (that)	while

Zdania te wprowadzają pewien określony typ realnego warunku czasowego, odnoszącego się do przyszłości i dlatego strukturą przypominają zdanie warunkowe trybu I. W zdaniu czasowym nie stosuje się czasu przyszłego (*Future*), lecz czas teraźniejszy (*Present*). W zdaniu głównym, natomiast, można zastosować dowolną formę czasową logicznie pasującą do kontekstu całej wypowiedzi, zwykle jest to forma czasu przyszłego np.

I am meeting Amanda tonight, so I will give her your invitation. →
When I meet Amanda tonight, I will give her your invitation.

Joe will arrive at five. By then, I will have prepared his lunch. →
I will prepare / will have prepared Joe's lunch before he arrives.

Mike will finish working soon. Then, he's visiting his wife in hospital. →
As soon as Mike finishes working, he's visiting his wife in hospital.

First, he's going to clean the house and then he is going to do the cooking. →
After he cleans the house, he's going to do the cooking.

Aby wyrazić czynność zakończoną lub też czynność trwającą przez dłuższy okres czasu, można w zdaniu czasowym zastosować czas *Present Perfect*. Najczęściej stosuje się go po spójnikach: **after**, **as soon as**, **when** np.

After we have installed the windows , we will start painting the walls.
As soon as we have returned, we will have the photographs developed.
When Steve has passed his exams, he will go on holiday.

Spójniki **as**, **when** oraz **while** mogą opisywać czynności wykonywane jednocześnie lub podkreślać fakt, iż czynność późniejsza wynika z czynności poprzedzającej ją np.

I will call on my cousin Greg while I am in New York.

While we're visiting the museum, don't make noise, children.

When we are back together, I will tell Lisa I love her more often.

As we pass by the city center, you will see the magnificent old buildings.

W zdaniach formalnych po spójnikach **when** oraz **while** można opuścić podmiot oraz orzeczenie **be** np.

While in the Palace, remember to behave in an appropriate manner. =

While you are in the Palace, remember ...

When spoken to by an adult, don't keep your hands in your pockets. =

When you are spoken to by an adult, don't ...

Spójnik **till** / **until** wyraża znaczenie ‘dopóki nie’. Należy jednak pamiętać, że w zdaniu czasowym ze spójnikiem **till** / **untill** zaprzeczenia zwykle nie stosuje się np.

We will not resume climbing till the weather improves.

I am going to repeat it again and again until everyone believes me that I am innocent.

Spójnik **the sooner** wyraża znaczenie ‘im szybciej’. Zwykle w zdaniu czasowym występuje on w kombinacji z innym przysłówkiem/przymiotnikiem w stopniu wyższym np.

The sooner you forget about the boy, the less you will suffer.

The sooner they arrive, the bigger a chance they will have to buy tickets.

Niekiedy spójniki czasowe są stosowane w zdaniach opisujących czynności regularne w czasie teraźniejszym. W takim przypadku w zdaniu czasowym oraz w zdaniu głównym można zastosować dowolny czas teraźniejszy np.

When they meet, they usually talk about football.

Why do we always have to wait until you get ready?

While the wind is blowing, our boat is sailing faster.

After you chop the onions, you put them in a pot. (a recipe)

She no sooner starts dating a boy than she finds him boring.

Before he goes out to work, he always has breakfast at home.

Spójniki czasowe występują także w zdaniach w czasie przeszłym np.

Before they got married, they had quarreled and made it up at least ten times.

The moment I saw that girl, I knew she was born to be mine forever.

Whenever someone mentioned her husband's name, she wept.

After I had completed the course, I started looking for a job.

I heard someone crying while I was climbing the stairs.

Barry used to like pudding when he was a child.

Spójniki **hardly ... when / before**, **scarcely ... when / before** oraz **no sooner ... than** często występują z czasem **Past Perfect** dla podkreślenia czynności zakończonej tuż przed rozpoczęciem kolejnej czynności np.

I had hardly left the office when I heard the phone on my desk ringing.

Wendy had scarcely eaten lunch before she felt hungry again.

Tom had no sooner repaired the engine than it broke down.

Konstrukcja ze spójnikiem ‘since’.

Spójnik czasowy **since** zwykle występuje z czasem **Present Perfect (Continuous)** np.

Freddie has changed a lot since the last time I saw him.

We have been preparing the performance since April.

Jest on także stosowany z konstrukcją:

It + be + określenie czasu + since + Present Perfect / Past Simple / Past Perfect

It is five months since we have met. =

We haven't met for five months.

It is many years since I have travelled abroad. =

I haven't travelled abroad for many years.

It is two years since Jonah last saw his son. =

Jonah last saw his son two years ago.

It is ages since Nicole last performed live. =

Nicole last performed live ages ago.

It was many years since she had spoken her native language. =

She hadn't spoken her native language for many years.

EXERCISE BANK

I. Choose one correct answer.

1. We won't let you go **after/until** you tell us what has happened.
2. **While/Immediately** the accident victim is brought to hospital, he will be operated on.
3. I will have got better **by the time/as long as** you return from your business trip.
4. It is six months **when/since** you have gone to the dentist.
5. **As long as/Whenever** you keep silent, nothing wrong will happen to you.
6. The defender will have to be rehabilitated **as/before** he is allowed to play in another game.
7. **Once/While** the new flyover has been built, the traffic in the city center will become less congested.
8. **After/As long as** the storm has subsided, the rescue action will be resumed.
9. I will only feel safe **when/while** the blackmailer is caught and put in prison.
10. **Immediately/The sooner** the production is resumed, the less money the factory will lose.

II. Put the verbs in the correct form.

1. As soon as I (receive) my salary, I (pay) all the overdue bills.
2. Don't do anything until the ambulance (arrive).
3. I promise I (give) you a call immediately I (obtain) some news from the headquarters.
4. 'I'm going to France next week.' 'While you (be) in Paris, (you/buy) me a bottle of a French perfume?'
5. Why wait till five? The sooner we (go), the more time we (have) to find better seats in the stadium.
6. What (you/do) when you (retire)?
7. Once they (decorate) the stage, I (make) them arrange the chairs in the concert hall.
8. I've got a ready plan. After I (graduate) from university, I (set up) my own catering business.
9. When my brother (come) for a visit tonight, I (ask) him to fix the lamp on the wall.
10. As soon as the plane (land), its engines (inspect) by the technicians.

11. The moment the alarm (go) off, the security officers (rush) to eliminate the danger.
12. When the clouds (disperse), you (see) the mountain range reaching for the skies.
13. The kidnappers say they (not set) the hostages free until all their instructions (carry out).
14. Before you (pronounce) someone guilty, make sure that the evidence you possess is irrefutable.
15. You (be) able to admire the marvellous scenery as we (fly) over the canyon.

III. Rewrite or join the sentences using the prompts so the meaning remains the same.

1. The UN forces will only leave when there's a lasting peace in the area. (UNTIL)
.....
2. Just as I had fallen asleep the phone rang. (HARDLY)
I
3. In two years' time, Thomas will be 18. He will inherit his father's fortune, then.
When
4. The employees won't resume working until their wages are paid. (AFTER)
.....
5. The guests will arrive at about six. We will have got everything ready by then.
By the time
6. She had hardly put on her new stilettos when one heel got broken. (SOONER)
She
7. First, I will put my baby to bed and then I will do the washing. (BEFORE)
.....
8. Skiing down the slope Judith fell down and sprained her ankle. (WHILE)
.....
9. I will press the green button and at the same moment the machine will start.
The moment
10. Mr Sellers last went to the cinema two years ago.
It

14. Zdania okolicznikowe celu - Adverbial clauses of purpose

W języku angielskim cel określonej czynności najłatwiej jest wyrazić przy użyciu konstrukcji bezokolicznikowej np.

*We're going downtown **to look for** bargains.*

*Mike went abroad **to study** foreign languages.*

Cel można także wyrazić przy zastosowaniu spójników:

in order / so as / so that

In order / so as + bezokolicznik

Spójniki **in order** oraz **so as** występują z czasownikiem w postaci pełnego bezokolicznika (*full infinitive*). Obydwa spójniki wyrażają takie samo znaczenie i zwykle stosowane są w zdaniach formalnych np.

*I've taken my binoculars **in order to** see better.*

*Tom took his boots off **in order not to** dirty the floor.*

*We were whispering all the time **so as not to** wake the baby up.*

*I asked the dentist for an anesthetic injection **so as not to** feel the pain.*

Zastosowanie spójników **in order** lub **so as** jest szczególnie przydatne w zdaniach z dopełnieniem osobowym, jeżeli cel danej czynności odnosi się do podmiotu, nie zaś do dopełnienia. Dzięki zastosowaniu spójników **in order / so as** można uniknąć nieporozumienia np.

*I made the kids play in the garden **so as to** clean the house. =*

*I made the kids play in the garden **because** I wanted to clean the house.*

*I made the kids play in the garden **to get some fresh air.** =*

*I made the kids play in the garden **because** I wanted them to get some fresh air.*

Należy pamiętać, że w zdaniach wyrażających cel nie stosuje się formy przeczącej pełnego bezokolicznika. W takim przypadku należy zastosować spójniki **in order not / so as not** np.

*I preferred to keep silent **so as not to offend anyone.** (nie **not to offend**)*

*Janice went to the airport earlier **in order not to miss her flight.** (nie **not to miss**)*

So that / in order that

Spójniki **so that** oraz **in order that** występują w zdaniach złożonych, w których cel danej czynności odnosi się do innego podmiotu niż podmiot zdania głównego lub, gdy główny podmiot jest wspomniany ponownie w zdaniu podrzędnym.

Po spójniku **so that** stosuje się czasowniki modalne **can / may / will / shall** - w czasie teraźniejszym lub przyszłym oraz **could / might / would / should** - w czasie przeszłyim. Po spójniku **in order that** zwykle używa się **may / shall** - w czasie teraźniejszym oraz **might / should** - w czasie przeszłyim np.

We've built the drive so that people on wheelchairs can get into the building easily.

The workers are sprinkling sand on the road so that it will not be so slippery.

The boss gave Rick an advance in order that he might buy a new suit.

The kidnappers gagged the woman's mouth so that she wouldn't scream.

Spójnik **in order that** jest stosowany dość rzadko, zwykle w zdaniach formalnych.

W języku potocznym o wiele częściej stosuje się spójnik **so that**, zwykle z **can / could / will** lub **would** np.

I've opened the front door so that some fresh air will get in.

Please, give us more time so that we can learn more for the exam.

Alice's parents bought her a dog so that she wouldn't feel lonely.

The police had sealed the room so that nobody could enter it.

Przyimek 'for'.

Przyimek **for** może być stosowany dla wyrażenia celu lub sposobu zastosowania określonej rzeczy np.

The electrocardiograph is used for diagnosing the heart rate.

Physical exercise is good for your health.

I have come to you for advice.

Spójnik 'in case'.

Spójnik **in case** wyraża znaczenie 'na wypadek gdyby'. Spójnik ten zwykle występuje ze zdaniem opisującym czynność podjętą w celu uniknięcia określonych skutków. Jeżeli czasownik w zdaniu głównym jest wyrażony w czasie teraźniejszym lub przyszłym, wówczas po spójniku **in case** występuje czas teraźniejszy (*Present Simple*) np.

Let's take our raincoats in case it starts to rain.

We have bought some wine in case some guests call in at the weekend.

Jeżeli czasownik w zdaniu głównym wyrażony jest w czasie przeszłym, wówczas po spójniku **in case** także używa się czas przeszły np.

Mr Hamilton had built his own shelter in case a nuclear war broke out.

We carried the tents and the sleeping bags in case we had to sleep in the open.

Zarówno w czasie teraźniejszym, jak i przeszłym po spójniku **in case** można zastosować czasownik modalny **should** z bezokolicznikiem czasownika (*bare infinitive*). Jego użycie wskazuje na nieco mniejsze prawdopodobieństwo zaistnienia określonych warunków np.

I'll ring Jim up to remind him of the meeting in case he should forget about it.

Frank was wearing a helmet in case he should be hit by a falling piece of rock.

EXERCISE BANK

I. Put **to** or **for** in the gaps.

1. We've come here fun, not to do such hard work.
2. They had been walking through the jungle for hours only discover that the ancient Aztec temple was in deep ruin.
3. The methods that they employ achieving their goals are unethical.
4. Simon has been saving money summer holiday. He hopes to save enough go on a trip to Egypt.
5. This liquid cannot be used repelling flying insects.
6. open the bottle, you must use a corkscrew.
7. I'm training hard another victory. I want to win the championship again.
8. Helen has taken a year off in order look after her three-month old baby.
9. Why don't you put on the glasses see better?
10. Is Mrs Edwards experienced enough the position of a CEO?
11. Have you saved enough buy a house yet?
12. New affection is the best medicine a broken heart.
13. Every morning the man walks up and down the beach look for amber.
14. Do you use this brush clean your clothing?
15. I've left my car in the garage overhauling.

II. Complete the sentences using **so as** or **so that** and the appropriate phrases.

- | | |
|--------------------------------------|--|
| a. the boss would see his dedication | f. avoid meeting my ex-husband |
| b. it wouldn't go stale | g. no more inmates will break away |
| c. reconsider all these propositions | h. the dogs cannot come inside the house |
| d. be well prepared for her exam | i. everyone can hear me well |
| e. pay back their son's debts | j. the neighbours will not spy on us |

1. I've closed the front door
2. Pauline has been studying day and night
3. I turned round and walked out of the store
4. Tim put the bread back in the bin
5. We're going to put a high fence around our house
6. Mark would be the last employee to leave the office
7. We'll have to hold another meeting
8. I'm going to use the microphone
9. The security measures in the prison must be increased
10. The Smiths have taken a huge loan

III. Rewrite or join the sentences using the prompts.

1. I gave Sue my address because I wanted her to write to me regularly. (SO THAT)
.....

2. Garry ran all the way because he didn't want to miss his school bus. (SO AS)
.....

3. I won't put my saving in the bank as I'm afraid it may be robbed. (IN CASE)
.....

4. Grease the hinges. I don't want them to creak. (SO THAT)
.....

5. The officers use trained dogs that help them find smuggled drugs. (IN ORDER)
.....

6. Water the flowers regularly. I don't want them to wither. (SO THAT)
.....

7. The opera singer cancelled her concert for fear of losing her voice. (IN CASE)
.....

8. Michael needs to have a rest and that's why he has taken a day off. (SO AS)
.....

9. The hunters were walking very quietly because they didn't want to scare the deer away. (IN ORDER)
-

10. Many families adopt orphans because they want them to know that there's still a lot of love in this world. (SO THAT)
-

15. Zdania okolicznikowe wynikowe - Adverbial clauses of result

Spójnikami stosowanymi w zdaniach wynikowych są:

so ... that oraz **such ... that**

So ... that

Po przysłówku **so** w zdaniu wynikowym może wystąpić inny przysłówek lub przymiotnik np.

The explosion was so great that all the windows in the building were shattered.

They were talking so loudly that they didn't hear the burglar break in.

So może również poprzedzać **much** oraz **many**, także wówczas, gdy występują one przed rzeczownikiem np.

I had no idea you loved that girl so much.

So much rain fell that the streets were flooded.

There were so many problems to work out that I didn't know which one to start with.

W języku potocznym słowo **that** jest często pomijane np.

She was so exhausted (that) she could hardly breathe.

He was driving so fast (that) he didn't see me walking in the street.

W zdaniach formalnych **so** + 'przymiotnik/przysłówek' można umieścić na początku zdania, co pozwala w sposób szczególny wzmocnić znaczenie przymiotnika lub przysłówka. W konstrukcji takiej należy jednak zastosować inwersję czasownika (⇒ 18 str. 244) np.

So interesting was the lecture that I decided to stay till the end.

So trustworthy did she seem to be that everybody confided in her.

Such ... that

Po przymiotniku **such** w zdaniu wynikowym może wystąpić przymiotnik wraz z rzeczownikiem np.

Mark was such a good child that we never had problems with him.

It was such an exhausting journey that I fell asleep immediately I returned home.

Po przymiotniku **such** nie stosuje się przysłówków **much** oraz **many**.

Konstrukcję **such + a/an + 'przymiotnik' + 'rzeczownik' + that** można zastąpić konstrukcją **so + 'przymiotnik' + a/an + 'rzeczownik'**. Jest ona jednak rzadziej stosowana i ma wydźwięk bardziej formalny np.

Billy is such a kind person that ... = Billy is so kind a person that ...

He made such a big mistake that ... = He made so big a mistake that ...

EXERCISE BANK

I. Put **so** or **such** in the gaps.

1. That dog of yours is fat that it can hardly move.
2. nice was the atmosphere at the party that we decided to stay longer.
3. Frank is an unpleasant type that nobody in the office wants to work with him.
4. We have received many orders for the new model that we have had to increase production.
5. Robbie used to be a vivid child that we had to keep an eye on him at all times.
6. The audience gave the young violinist huge an applause that she couldn't help crying of emotion.
7. There was a big crowd inside the hall that we had to elbow our way through it.
8. much money does she earn that she can afford to go on holiday abroad three times in a year.
9. She gave me impertinent a reply that I went speechless.
10. The hotel host quoted exorbitant prices that we decided to spend the night in our car.

II. Rewrite the following sentences using **so ... that.**

1. Bonzo was such a fine dog that we miss him a lot.

Bonzo

2. It is such a good book that I cannot stop reading it.

.....

3. Roger scored so many points that he won the first place.

So

4. This is such a difficult trick that only an experienced conjurer can perform it.

.....

5. It was such a drastic solution that nobody agreed to implement it.

.....

III. Rewrite the following sentences using **such ... that.**

1. The shop assistant made so rude a remark that the client got offended.

.....

2. The girl was so beautiful that I couldn't take my eyes off her.

She

3. His headache was so bad that he could hardly fall asleep.

He had

4. It was so harsh a sound that I felt pain in my ears.

.....

5. Mark is so conscientious a worker that he takes care of every single detail.

.....

16. Zdania okolicznikowe przyczyny - Adverbial clauses of reason

Zdania okolicznikowe przyczyny stanowią odpowiedź na pytanie 'Dlaczego?' - **Why?** Spójnikami najczęściej stosowanymi w zdaniach tego typu są:

as, because, since

W większości zdań powyższe spójniki mogą być stosowane zamiennie, choć spójnik **since** dość rzadko występuje w mowie potocznej. Jego zastosowanie ogranicza się do sytuacji formalnych np.

I called an ambulance as / because / since my wife wasn't feeling well.

As / Because / Since there were so many people in the shop, we decided to come later.

W języku potocznym przyczynę można także opisać przy użyciu spójnika **seeing that** np.

Professor Sears changed the topic of his lecture, seeing that the students were bored.

Seeing that we don't have much money left, we cannot do any more shopping.

Spójnik **because** można zastąpić spójnikiem **so**, zmieniając szyk zdania np.

*Because I was in a hurry, I didn't eat breakfast at home. =
I was in a hurry, so I didn't eat breakfast at home.*

*James isn't going skiing with us because he has a bad knee injury. =
James has a bad knee injury, so he isn't going skiing with us.*

W zdaniach jak powyżej spójnik **so** można zastąpić przysłówkiem **therefore**, choć jego zastosowanie ograniczone jest do sytuacji formalnych np.

The workers have gone out on strike and therefore the production has been stopped.

Therefore może także zajmować miejsce na początku lub w środku zdania np.

*The situation became critical. Therefore, more military forces were deployed.
The bribery affair had come out. The minister was therefore forced to resign.*

Because of, due to, owing to

Spójniki **because of**, **due to** oraz **owing to** mogą być stosowane zamiennie w zdaniach opisujących przyczynę. Występują one z rzeczownikami np.

*All flights have been cancelled because of the snowstorm.
The whole country is in ruin due to the economic recession.
Owing to the landslide, hundreds of families have lost their homes.*

For, with

Przyimki **for** oraz **with** mogą także opisywać przyczynę, zwykle w zdaniach formalnych lub w języku pisany. **For** nie występuje na początku zdania np.

*The scheme collapsed, for it hadn't been well thought over.
The school was closed, for (= because of) the faulty heating system,*

Przyimek **with** może wyrażać znaczenie zbliżone do **because there is/are** oraz może zajmować miejsce na początku zdania np.

With so many accounts to do, we have had to hire extra accountants.

With so much financial trouble, the company may go bankrupt.

EXERCISE BANK

I. Rewrite the sentences using the prompts so the meaning remains the same.

1. We're giving our baby the antibiotics because she has caught a bad cold. (SO)

.....

2. As there has been too little rain, our crops have been wasted.

Due to

3. With so many daily duties, Gina tends to forget about the arrangements she makes.

Because

4. The water is polluted and therefore the fish keep dying. (BECAUSE OF)

.....

5. The whole country was in mourning, so the celebrations were cancelled. (FOR)

.....

6. Because of her inability to speak Russian she found it hard to communicate.

Since

7. He was going to faint, so we laid him on the floor and put his feet up.

Seeing that

8. Because of a number of bad decisions, the government lost its popularity.

With

9. The village inhabitants had to be evacuated as the volcano erupted. (OWING TO)

.....

10. The prices of petrol went up because a war broke out in the Middle East.

Due to

11. The party was dissolved since nobody voted for it in the election. (THEREFORE)

.....

12. Mr Hicks didn't arrive on time because he had got stuck in a traffic jam.

As

13. Mike had to go to hospital because he was badly infected with flu.

Because of

14. As the reforms were not effective, the country economy was ruined. (FOR)

.....

15. The woman lied in court since she wanted to cover up for her husband. (SO)

.....

17. Zdania okolicznikowe ugody - Adverbial clauses of concession

Spójnikami najczęściej stosowanymi w zdaniach okolicznikowych ugody są:

**although, despite, even if, even though, however, in spite of,
no matter, nevertheless, though, whereas, whatever, while**

Although, even if, even though, though

Spójniki **although, even if, even though** oraz **though** mogą być stosowane zamiennie np.

Although / Even if / Even though / Though the presents are not to your liking, you don't have to show your disappointment.

We lent them the money although we didn't know them too well.

Sarah went on smiling even though she wasn't feeling happy.

W powyższych zdaniach można zastosować spójnik **but**, zmieniając szyk zdania np.

We didn't know the people too well, but we lent them the money.

Sarah wasn't feeling happy, but she went on smiling.

Odnosząc się do informacji zawartej we wcześniejszym zdaniu nie można zastosować **although**, a jedynie **though** np.

I don't quite like meat. The meatloaf you cooked tasted good, though.

The weather was bad. They went sailing, though.

Spójnik **though** lub **as** może być poprzedzony przymiotnikiem/przysłówkiem, którego znaczenie jest dzięki temu w sposób szczególny wyróżnione np.

Although the road was slippery, they drove very fast. =

Slippery though / as the road was, they drove very fast.

Takie zastosowanie **though** oraz **as** dość często występuje z czasownikami typu:

appear, be, look, seem, sound

Unbelievable though it seems, they are going to climb the mountain in winter.

Strange as it may sound, the jury haven't found the man guilty.

W podobny sposób można zastosować zwrot **Much as** np.

Much as I respect you, I don't agree with you this time. =
Although I respect you, I don't agree with you this time.

Spójnik **even though** wyraża znaczenie zbliżone do **although** np.

Even though (= Although) you aren't rich, you may still donate some money.

Spójnik **even if** wyraża znaczenie zbliżone do **whether or not** np.

Even if you aren't rich, you may still donate some money. =
Whether or not you are rich, you may still donate some money.

Różnica pomiędzy obydwoma spójnikami dotyczy całkowitej pewności (**even though**) lub jej braku (**even if**) co do myśli wyrażonej w zdaniu.

However

Przysłówek **however** może wystąpić z przymiotnikiem lub przysłówkiem np.

However dangerous the assignment was, they didn't hesitate to take it. =
Although the assignment was dangerous, they didn't hesitate to take it.

However slowly he was speaking, we still couldn't understand him. =
Although he was speaking slowly, we still couldn't understand him.

However może także pojawić się w funkcji spójnika, zajmując miejsce na początku, końcu lub w środku zdania - po pierwszym słowie lub zwrocie np.

He works hard. However, he doesn't earn much.

He doesn't earn much however.

He, however, doesn't earn much.

Nevertheless

Przysłówek **nevertheless** może wystąpić w funkcji spójnika wyrażając znaczenie zbliżone do **but / however** i zajmując miejsce na początku lub końcu zdania, w którym występuje np.

The villa was extremely expensive, nevertheless they bought it.

Sally was dead beat. She went swimming, nevertheless.

No matter

Spójnik **no matter** zwykle występuje z zaimkami typu: **what, who, when, where, which** np.

No matter what she tells you, try not to lose your temper.

No matter who takes his place, they will have to work these problems out.

No matter which country you settle down in, you will have to learn the language.

Kombinacje typu **no matter + what / who / when / where / which** można zastąpić zaimkami: **whatever, whoever, whenever, wherever, whichever** np.

Whatever she tells you, try not to lose your temper.

Whoever takes his place, they will have to work these problems out.

Whichever country you settle down in, you will have to learn the language.

While, whereas

Spójniki **while** oraz **whereas** mogą wyrażać znaczenie zbliżone do **although / but** np.

While / Whereas (= Although) we were trying to find a good solution to the problem, the management were only criticizing us.

He wanted to sleep upstairs, while / whereas (= but) she insisted on taking the room downstairs.

Despite, in spite of

Spójniki **despite** oraz **in spite of** wyrazają to samo znaczenie zbliżone do **although**.

Zarówno **despite**, jak i **in spite of** mogą wystąpić z rzeczownikiem, czasownikiem w postaci *Gerund* lub zaimkiem np.

In spite of being severely wounded, the driver managed to call an ambulance.

In spite of their financial trouble, the company didn't lay off any workers.

Despite having little time, Chris dropped in for a cup of coffee

Despite my horrible headache, I went on working.

Spójniki **despite** oraz **in spite of** nie występują z pełnym zdaniem orzeczeniowym. Jednakże, dodając zwrot **the fact of** można takie zdanie zastosować np.

In spite of the fact that she was feeling unwell, she didn't cancel the concert.

Despite the fact that we have lost the game, we still lead in our group.

EXERCISE BANK

I. Choose one correct answer.

1. **Though / Despite** he never learns much, Tom doesn't have any problems at school.
2. Mr Spike wanted to watch a thriller **as / while** his wife preferred to watch a love story.
3. Boorish **whereas / though** Adam may appear to be, he is a really nice person if you know him well.
4. The shop owner wouldn't exchange the faulty razor **even though / in spite of** I held the receipt that he himself had made out.
5. Freddie runs a private business. He's not prospering, **whereas / however**.
6. **No matter / Despite** where you go, be always polite to the people you meet.
7. Much **as / even if** we like them, we're not going to invite them to our party this time.
8. **Nevertheless / While** the doctors were doing their best, the patient's condition was getting worse and worse.
9. **However / Though** difficult the exam was, Ricky passed it with flying colours.
10. **In spite of / Even though** the fact that they risked losing their lives, the refugees decided to swim across the river.

II. Rewrite or join the sentences using the prompts so the meaning remains the same.

1. Chris is very sociable, but his twin brother, Andy, is rather introverted.
Whereas
2. No matter how long your job interview takes, don't show a sign of weariness.
However
3. Although she was busy, Alison agreed to help me with the mathematical problem.
Despite
4. We made every effort to satisfy the client's expectations, but he was still displeased.
Even though
5. Whatever you hear in court, don't make any comments aloud.
No matter
6. I admire his great skill, but I'm not going to give him a steady employment.
Much as

7. There was a thick fog, but the airport authorities didn't cancel any flights.
In spite of
8. The puzzle may have sounded hard, but Simon solved it with ease.
However
9. Although she seemed to be irritated, she didn't say a word.
Irritated
10. Terry ran as fast as he could, but he didn't achieve the expected result.
Although

PROGRESS TEST

Zdania okoliczniowe - Adverbial clauses

I. Choose the correct answer or answers.

1. you have graduated from university, will you start looking for a job?
a) Though b) After c) Since d) When
2. I've lit the log fire it will get hotter in the room.
a) whereas b) for c) immediately d) so that
3. financial difficulties, the annual celebrations have been called off this year.
a) For b) Owing to c) Because d) Due to
4. Inexperienced Ms Levin may be, she copes really well with the tasks she is given.
a) so b) though c) even if d) as
5. being awfully terrified, the young scout didn't refuse to keep guard at night.
a) In spite of b) However c) While d) Despite
6. how sincerely Jack apologized to Nicole, she wouldn't forgive him.
a) Whereas b) Although c) No matter d) Nevertheless
7. Maria left hospital than she felt the same excruciating pain in her stomach.
a) hardly b) immediately c) since d) no sooner
8. I've sprayed my whole body with the repellent mosquitoes will not bite me.
a) in order that b) due to c) therefore d) so that

9. expensive this plot of land was, we loved it and the surroundings so much that we didn't hesitate a moment to buy it.
a) Whatever b) Even though c) As d) However
10. We'll start printing your brochure our printing machine has been repaired.
a) after b) the moment c) immediately d) as soon as

II. Put the verbs in the correct form.

1. They weren't yet ready when I arrived to pick them up. Margaret
(do) her hair in the bathroom while Josh (polish) his shoes.
2. Despite (live) a humble life herself, Mrs Tanner would always spare a penny for people in need.
3. I keep the front gate locked so that the dogs (not run) away.
4. The sooner the police (take) up the pursuit, the bigger a chance they (have) of capturing the suspects.
5. Anna has promised that she (not leave) before she (say) goodbye to all her next of kin.
6. The storm scarcely (subside) when we (get) a radio message of a tornado that was moving toward the coast.
7. We have closed the road so as (continue) the reconstruction works.
8. Because of (eat) too many sweets, you keep putting on weight.
9. Now that the factory smokestacks (stop) emitting poisonous fumes, the air should be cleaner and the forests should starts reviving.
10. The situation is rather tense and it (not improve) until the both sides (sign) a peace agreement.

III. Rewrite or join the sentences using the prompts so the meaning remains the same.

1. My boss will return at five. By then, I will have completed the report.
By the time
2. She may be a little proud, but I still like her a lot.
Proud
3. It was such an expensive device that we had to take a loan to buy it.
The device
4. Sammy hasn't driven a lorry for two years.
It

5. The electricity won't be switched on until all the overdue bills have been paid.
The moment
6. I keep the keys in my hand all the time to avoid losing them. (IN CASE)
.....
7. The day was windy and cold, but the holidaymakers went to the beach.
Even though
8. He put the muzzle on the dog's mouth because he didn't want it to bite anybody.
(SO THAT)
.....
9. Gina was tired, but she didn't lose her concentration.
However
10. Although she didn't love the man, she agreed to marry him.
In spite of

18. Inwersja - Inversion

Pojęcie inwersji dotyczy sytuacji, w której podmiot zdania twierdzącego oraz jego orzeczenie zostają zamienione miejscami. Budowa takiego zdania przypomina strukturę pytania, choć nie wyraża znaczenia pytającego. Inwersja czasownika jest niezbędna w sytuacji, gdy na początku zdania umieszczony jest przysłówek lub zwrot przysłówkowy o znaczeniu negującym. Zdania z inwersją stosowane są dla wzmocnienia informacji, którą przekazują lub dla nadania jej większego dramatyzmu. Zdania takie mają wydźwięk formalny. Przysłówki oraz zwroty przysłówkowe, po których stosowana jest inwersja to:

at no time	nor	only then/when
hardly ever	not for one moment	on no account
hardly ... when	not only	on no condition
in few cases	not till/until	rarely
in no circumstances	nowhere	scarcely ever
little	only after	scarcely ... when
neither	only by	seldom
never before/again	only if	so (... that)
no longer	only in this way	such (... that)
no sooner ... than	only later	under no circumstances

I didn't think of giving up climbing at any time. →
At no time did I think of giving up climbing.

They hardly ever consult their decisions with me. →
Hardly ever do they consult their decisions with me.

She knows very little about what has happened. →
Little does she know about what has happened.

I haven't ever listened to music like this before. →
Never before have I listened to music like this.

She had no sooner gone out than it started to rain. →
No sooner had she gone out **than** it started to rain.

Mick not only travelled in England; he also learned the language. →
Not only did Mick travel in England; he also learned the language.

It wasn't until she came closer that I recognized her. →
Not until she came closer did I recognize her.

You will not find so hospitable people as here anywhere. →
Nowhere will you find so hospitable people as here.

You can't leave the camp on any account. →
On no account can you leave the camp.

Elks are rarely seen in this part of the continent. →
Rarely are elks seen in this part of the continent.

Inwersja czasownika jest także stosowana po przysłówkach:

so + 'przymiotnik' + ... **that** oraz **such** + **be** + ... **that**

The peace in the region is so frail that an outbreak of fighting seems inevitable. →
So frail is the peace in the region **that** an outbreak of fighting seems inevitable.

The collaboration is so strong that nothing can weaken it. →
Such is the strength of the collaboration **that** nothing can weaken it.

Inwersja czasownika występuje także w konstrukcji formalnej trybu warunkowego typu I, II oraz III np.

If a storm should strike, you are advised to sail back to the coast. →

Should a storm strike, you are advised to sail back to the coast.

If I were in your place, I wouldn't deposit so much money in the bank. →

Were I in your place, I wouldn't deposit so much money in the bank.

If the competitor had observed the rules, he wouldn't have been disqualified. →

Had the competitor observed the rules, he wouldn't have been disqualified.

W języku potocznym można także zastosować inwersję czasownika po przyimkach **as** oraz **than** w zdaniach typu:

*She was clever, as **was** her brother lub as her brother was.*

*Mr McAllister has expelled more students from school,
than **did** his predecessor lub than his predecessor did.*

W języku literackim lub w konstrukcjach formalnych inwersja może także pojawić się po wyrażeniach przysłówkowych, wskazujących na miejsce lub kierunek, umieszczonych na początku zdania np.

*Across the bridge **marched** a small unit of the allied soldiers.*

*On the window sill **was** (lub there was) a clay flower pot.*

Inwersja występuje także po przysłówkach **here**, **now** i **there** oraz po przyimkach typu **down**, **in**, **off**, **up**, **round** jeżeli zajmują one miejsce na początku zdania np.

Here comes the birthday cake.

Now goes the whole story.

Off went the pursuers.

Down fell the coin.

EXERCISE BANK

I. Choose one correct answer.

1. On no condition about our strategy with our rivals.

- a) you may talk b) may you talk

2. the door when I heard a knock.

- a) I had hardly locked b) Hardly I had locked

3. the danger zone in any circumstances.
a) You shouldn't enter b) Shouldn't you enter
4. Johnny didn't win the first place, nor the world record.
a) he didn't beat b) did he beat
5. Only when the lights went on the boy tampering with the door lock.
a) did I see b) I saw
6. None of us had realized how bad his condition was until
a) was he operated on b) he was operated on
7. Not only the terrorists but she also helped them plan their next attack.
a) did the woman hide b) the woman hid
8. Such that he remained speechless for about two minutes.
a) David's amazement was b) was David's amazement
9. It wasn't until yesterday that the whole truth.
a) she revealed b) did she reveal
10. Never something like that before.
a) have I experienced b) I have experienced

II. Put the verbs in the correct tense form.

1. Hardly (the concert/begin) when the lights (go off). Unfortunately, it had to be called off.
2. Seldom (Harry/travel) by plane. He's afraid of flying.
3. The authorities called on the police to escort the football fans. Only in this way (they/can/prevent) further riots.
4. Not till I (take) my glasses out of the case (I/see) they were broken.
5. Michael is rather indifferent to our problems. Little (he/care) about them.
6. At no time (Monica/consider) giving up her studies. She was really determined to become a lawyer.
7. I hadn't heard of a substance like this before, nor (I/realize) how dangerous it could be.
8. Only after (Mrs Wiggs/threaten) to take the matter to court, (she/receive) the money she had deposited.
9. No longer (Mr Andrews/work) for us. He was sacked when it turned out he had been trading the company confidential information.

10. In few cases (the bacteria/cause) serious gastric complications so far and that's why it's not considered particularly dangerous.

III. Complete each gap with one correct word.

1. Not they saw dry land, did the sailors believe their lives were saved.
2. Scarcely had the film started our TV set broke down.
3. Under no are you allowed to bathe in the river.
4. Pamela didn't want talk to me, did she take the flowers I brought her.
5. by tying the man's hands and legs were the policemen able to make him stop struggling.
6. No had one fallen tree been removed from the road than another was knocked down by the wind.
7. badly was my nose blocked that I could hardly breathe.
8. On no must you leave the baby unattended.
9. I had swallowed the pill when I felt the pain was disappearing.
10. was the children's excitement that they didn't notice Santa Clause was wearing their father's shoes and glasses.

IV. Rewrite the sentences using the prompts so the meaning remains the same.

1. We do not rent rooms any more.
No longer
2. We only realized we had crossed the border when we met the villagers.
Only when
3. It was the first time that I played in a casino.
Never before
4. If Tina doesn't undergo the treatment, she won't combat the infection.
Only if
5. You won't see such wonderful landscapes anywhere else.
Nowhere else
6. We couldn't understand what the woman was saying until she calmed down.
Not till
7. Let me know if you should come across that old album.
Should

8. I had only just gone to bed when the doorbell rang.
No sooner
9. The information may not be leaked to the press in any circumstances.
In no circumstances
10. Whales are not often seen in this part of the world.
Seldom
11. I didn't think of resigning for one moment.
Not for one moment
12. The temperature was really low, so the mountaineers had to wear face masks.
So
13. The negotiations would have collapsed if it hadn't been for your involvement.
Hadn't
14. As soon as he was released from prison, he committed another crime.
Hardly
15. It wasn't until last month that we learned our daughter was pregnant.
Not until
16. His career has never been exposed to a greater danger.
At no time
17. The politician was so embarrassed that he didn't know what to say.
Such
18. If I were to sign the agreement, I would discuss its conditions with my lawyer first.
Were
19. We could only save the company by selling it to a larger corporation.
Only by
20. The vault may not be left unlocked on any account.
On no account

19. Przedimki - Articles

19.1. Przedimek nieokreślony ‘a / an’ - The indefinite article ‘a / an’

Przedimek nieokreślony **a/an** zajmuje miejsce przed rzeczownikiem policzalnym w liczbie pojedynczej. Przedimek **a** stosowany jest przed rzeczownikiem rozpoczynającym się od spółgłoski np.

a bowl a case a record a traveller a watch

Przedimek **a** jest także stosowany przed rzeczownikami rozpoczynającymi się od samogłosek, których wymowa ma brzmienie spółgłoski np.

a union a university a eulogy

Przedimek **an** jest stosowany przed rzeczownikami rozpoczynającymi się od samogłoski np.

an attack an idea an element an offer an umpire

Przedimek **an** stosowany jest także przed rzeczownikami rozpoczynającymi się od spółgłoski ‘**h**’ o bezdźwięcznej wymowie np.

an heir an hour an honour

Przedimek **an** występuje przed skrótami wypowiadanymi według kolejnych liter oraz rozpoczynającymi się od A, E, F, H, I, L, M, N, O, R, S oraz X np.

an NHL player an MBA student an X-ray

Przed skrótami wypowiadanymi jako pojedyncze słowa stosuje się zaimek **a** lub **an** np.

a NASA project a UNESCO worker

Przedimek nieokreślony **a / an** jest stosowany:

- (1) przed rzeczownikiem, który reprezentuje grupę obiektów o tej samej nazwie:

*A sleeping pill helps you fall asleep.
An elevator takes you from one floor to another.*

- (2) przed rzeczownikiem, który jest wspomniany po raz pierwszy i nie reprezentuje jednej określonej osoby lub rzeczy np.

*Michael has made a sandwich for himself.
We have found a wallet under the park bench.*

- (3) przed nazwą zawodu np.

*My father is an electrician.
I am going to be a pediatrician.*

- (4) z określeniami ilości np.

a couple a dozen a few a little a lot of a great deal / number of

*You have made a lot of mistakes in the calculations.
There was a great number of people in the waiting room.*

- (5) z niektórymi liczebnikami w znaczeniu ‘jeden’ np.

a/one hundred a/one thousand a/one million a/one billion

- (6) przed rzeczownikiem **half** jeżeli rzeczownik ten poprzedzony jest liczebnikiem całkowitym np.

3 ½ - three and a half 10 ½ - ten and a half

- (7) przed ułamkami w znaczeniu ‘jeden’ np.

¼ - a/one quarter ¹/₅ - a/one fifth

- (8) z określeniami miar, cen, częstotliwości itp. np.

one hundred kilometres an hour 25 pounds a metre seven days a week

- (9) z wykrzyknieniami np.

What a lovely scarf! Such a cold approach!

- (10) przed nazwiskiem osoby, mówiąc o kimś zupełnie nieznanym np.

*A John Berry was looking for you while you were on holiday.
A Mr Douglas has left a message for you.*

(11) w zwrocie dzierżawczym: **a/an + of + mine/yours/his/hers etc.** np.

A friend of mine has told me this story.

This is a weakness of Peter's.

Liczebnik **one** jest stosowany zamiast przedimka **a/an**, aby podkreślić, że chodzi o jedną osobę lub rzecz, a nie więcej np.

I need one skilled engineer to operate the machine.

Joan has bought one book.

Liczebnika **one** nie stosuje się, gdy mowa jest o nieokreślonej osobie lub rzeczy, reprezentującej daną grupę np.

I would like to see a polar bear.

There is a computer on every desk in the office.

Przedimek nieokreślony **a/an** nie jest stosowany:

(1) przed rzeczownikiem w liczbie mnogiej np.

Do the Browns have children?

Rick likes horror films.

(2) przed rzeczownikiem niepoliczalnym np.

You should drink mineral water every day.

Knowledge is the key to success.

What I need is advice.

(3) przed imionami oraz nazwiskami osób np.

I like Frankie very much.

Adam Jones was nobody famous

Stewart appears to be a little worried.

(4) przed nazwami posiłków, za wyjątkiem sytuacji, kiedy przed rzeczownikiem znajduje się przymiotnik np.

Breakfast is said to be the most important meal of the day.

I don't remember when I ate such a delicious supper last time.

19.2. Przedimek określony ‘the’ – The definite article ‘the’

Przedimek określony **the** występuje przed rzeczownikami w liczbie pojedynczej i mnogiej, policzalnymi oraz niepoliczalnymi. Stosuje się go:

- (1) przed rzeczownikiem, który został wcześniej wspomniany np.

*We're going to **a** city in Andalusia. **The** city is called Seville.*

*I've taken **a** photo of **a** bird. **The** bird was probably a raven.*

- (2) przed rzeczownikiem opisującym osobę lub rzeczą jedyną w swoim rodzaju np.

*The Pope, John Paul II, has been **the** first non-Italian pope since 1523.*

The capital of Norway is Oslo.

The future doesn't look bright.

*Look at **the** sky!*

Rzeczowniki opisujące rzeczą unikalną to między innymi także:

*the air, the atmosphere, the climate, the Earth, the environment,
the European Community, the globe, the human race, the past,
the sky, the sun, the South Pole, the weather, the wind, the world*

Niektóre z powyższych rzeczowników mogą wystąpić z przedimkiem nieokreślonym **a/an** w sytuacji, gdy opisują przykład danej rzeczy lub pojęcia np.

*It's such **a** strong wind that I can hardly walk.*

A sun like ours has been discovered in a distant galaxy.

- (3) przed rzeczownikiem opisującym osobę lub rzeczą jedyną, ogólnie znaną lub szczególną w danym otoczeniu np.

*Let's go to **the** cinema. (There's only one cinema in our city.)*

*Jack's gone to **the** barber. (He always goes to the same barber.)*

*The children are in **the** park. (The park where they always play.)*

- (4) przed rzeczownikiem zdefiniowanym przy użyciu zwrota definiującego lub zdania z zaimkiem względnym np.

*I like **the** dress you have bought.*

*The man sitting at **the** bar is a stranger.*

*The boy who showed us **the** way looked like my brother.*

(5) przed przymiotnikiem w stopniu najwyższym np.

This is the highest building in the world.

It was the most embarrassing situation you could think of.

W języku potocznym przedimek **the** jest często pomijany jeżeli po przymiotniku nie ma rzeczownika lub zdania definiującego np.

'Which route did you take?' 'We took (the) shortest.'

Niekiedy przed przysłówkiem **most** zamiast przedimka **the** występuje przedimek nieokreślony **a** (przed rzeczownikiem policzalnym w liczbie pojedynczej) lub całkowity brak przedimka (przed rzeczownikiem niepoliczalnym lub rzeczownikiem policzalnym w liczbie mnogiej). W takim przypadku znaczenie przysłówka **most** zbliżone jest do znaczenia przysłówka **very** np.

Alice Holmes is a most promising young artist.

They are most controversial rules.

(6) przed liczebnikiem porządkowym np.

Who's the first to go?

This is the second time I've caught you cheating.

(7) przed rzeczownikiem lub przymiotnikiem reprezentującym klasę lub grupę osób, zwierząt lub rzeczy np.

The snowy owl is a bird of prey.

The coalminer may earn much but has not an easy life.

The needs of the disabled should be taken into account.

In every civilized society, the elderly are well looked after.

Przedimka **the** nie należy jednak stosować przed rzeczownikiem **man** w znaczeniu 'człowiek, rodzaj ludzki' np.

Over centuries, man has domesticated many a wild animal.

(8) przed rzeczownikiem reprezentującym grupę narodowościową np.

The English are proud of their Queen.

The French are fond of seafood.

- (9) przed imieniem oraz nazwiskiem osoby, aby upewnić się, że mowa jest o tej właściwej osobie, a nie innej osobie o tym samym imieniu i nazwisku.
W takim przypadku w mowie przedimek **the** jest silnie akcentowany np.

*Have you invited **the** Stephen Hawking to the conference?
She's **the** Alison Parker you have always wanted to meet.*

- (10) przed przymiotnikiem lub rzeczownikiem opisującym cechę osoby, której imię i nazwisko jest wymienione np.

*This is the unusual Michael Burnes.
Have you made an interview with the singer Mylene Farmer?*

- (11) przed nazwiskiem, w odniesieniu do całej rodziny np.

*I haven't seen the Mortons for some time. Have they moved out?
This is the Jackson family - the most famous family in the world.*

- (12) przed tytułem dzienników oraz niektórych tygodników:

The Weekly, The Independent, The Mirror, The Times

- (13) przed tytułami urzędowymi – (przedimek można także pominąć) np.

*Marion has been appointed (the) Chairwoman.
(The) President is going on a two-day official visit to Hong Kong.*

- (14) przed nazwą instrumentu muzycznego, opisując umiejętność grania na tym instrumencie np.

*Can you play the guitar?
My brother plays the saxophone beautifully.*

- (15) przed nazwą dnia, miesiąca lub pory roku, odnosząc się do tej jednej szczególnej np.

*On the Friday, Fiona said she didn't love me any more.
In the summer of 1980, Frank and Monica got married.
In the September, the days were hot and very sunny.*

- (16) przed nazwami pór roku ogólnie – (przyimek można także pominąć) np.

In (the) winter, we used to go skiing in the Alps.

We like to have barbecues in (the) summer.

- (17) przed nazwami pór dnia, za wyjątkiem **midday**, **midnight**, **noon** oraz **at/by night**, które występują bez przedimka np.

What are you going to do in the afternoon?

How about going to a disco in the evening?

We could hear wolves howling at midnight.

At noon, I will still be sitting in my office.

- (18) przed rzeczownikami typu: **church**, **college**, **hospital**, **prison**, **school**, **university** wyłącznie w przypadku, gdy są one opisane jako budynki lub miejsca. W przypadku, gdy mowa jest o właściwym zastosowaniu jednej z takich instytucji, przedimka nie używa się np.

Jeff went to hospital (because he was ill).

We went to the hospital to visit Jeff.

I go to church once a week (to pray).

They went to the church to admire its unique architecture.

Podobna zasada dotyczy rzeczownika **bed** np.

I advise you to stay in bed if you're not feeling well.

I've found these phone cards under the bed. Whose are they?

- (19) przed rzeczownikami **cinema**, **opera** oraz **theatre**, przedstawiając je jako instytucje kulturalne lub budynki, w których odbywają się przedstawienia np.

Shall we go to the cinema tonight?

I last went to the opera seven years ago.

Stosując te same rzeczowniki dla nazwania formy sztuki, przedimka nie używa się np.

Opera doesn't interest me as much as theatre.

Cinema isn't the oldest form of art, but it's the most popular.

- (20) przed nazwami posiłków, wyłącznie w sytuacji, gdy mowa jest o konkretnym lub zdefiniowanym posiłku np.

The breakfast they served wasn't to my liking.

- (21) przed rzeczownikiem poprzedzającym zwrot definiujący składający się z przyimka **of** oraz innego rzeczownika np.

The implementation of the reforms will result in visible changes.

We soon figured out the hidden meaning of his words.

What's the price of these shoes?

- (22) przed nazwami własnymi typu:

- (a) nazwy niektórych państw, miast lub dzielnic np.

the Netherlands, the United Kingdom, the Lebanon, the Hague, the City

- (b) nazwy złożone z przyimkiem **of** np.

the United States of America, the Tower of London, the Isle of Man

- (c) nazwy złożone z przymiotnika (za wyjątkiem **east**, **west**, **north** oraz **south**) i rzeczownika np.

the Caribbean Sea, the Middle East, the Atlantic Ocean

W przypadku przymiotników **east**, **west**, **north** oraz **south** przedimek występuje tylko przed niektórymi nazwami złożonymi np.

the West End, the South / North Pole

ale

South Africa, East Anglia

W przypadku, gdy przymiotniki te opisują strony świata lub występują w postaci rzeczownika, są one poprzedzone przedimkiem **the** np.

The East meets the West. (newspaper headline)

My friends live somewhere in the south of Argentina.

- (d) nazwy oceanów, mórz, jezior, rzek, archipelagów, łańcuchów górskich oraz pustyni, np.

the Pacific, the Kara sea, the Amazon, the Seychelles , the Andes, the Gobi

Przedimków nie należy stosować:

- (1) przed rzeczownikiem nieokreślonym (wspomnianym po raz pierwszy) w liczbie mnogiej lub przed rzeczownikiem niepoliczalnym np.

Stella says she likes meeting new people.

We have spent a lot of money on education.

Foreign tourists are advised to keep their money on them.

W zdaniach twierdzących przed rzeczownikiem niepoliczalnym lub rzeczownikiem nieokreślonym w liczbie mnogiej można umieścić określnik **some** (**any** - w pytaniach i zaprzeczeniach) np.

There are some letters for you on the desk.

The letters may contain some important information.

Określnik **some** może opisywać ograniczoną, lecz niezdefiniowaną grupę osób lub rzeczy np.

Some doctors believe that strict dieting can work wonders.

I like some fruit. For example, peaches, pineapples and strawberries.

W przypadku, gdy nie jest istotne, czy rzeczownik opisuje określoną grupę/ilość osób lub rzeczy, czy też wyraża znaczenie ogólne, określnik **some** nie jest wymagany np.

I have made (some) coffee for you.

The people have brought (some) photos with them.

Some może zastąpić przedimek **a/an** jeżeli wskazuje na fakt, iż nie wiadomo dokładnie, o której osobie lub rzeczy jest mowa np.

Some reporter asked the prime minister this question.

We have been given this map by some tourist.

- (2) przed nazwami własnymi typu:

- (a) imię i nazwisko osoby znajomej lub w znaczeniu ogólnym np.

I know Diane Smith. She is my workmate.

Ronald Nichols is a young promising film director.

- (b) nazwy kontynentów, państw, miast oraz nazwy geograficzne oprócz nazw wymienionych powyżej

(c) nazwy większości ulic np.

We live in Clover Street.

(d) nazwy dni oraz miesięcy w znaczeniu ogólnym np.

On Saturday, we usually go to the cinema.

Our baby was born in September.

(e) przed nazwami święt np.

We're not going to school on New Year's Eve,

I love Christmas. For me, it's the best part of the year.

(3) przed nazwami posiłków, za wyjątkiem sytuacji, gdy mowa jest o szczególnym posiłku np.

Let's have lunch together.

The lunch in the Presidential Palace was most lavish.

(4) przed nazwami dziedzin naukowych w pojęciu ogólnym np.

My older sister studies geography

Adam Brown is a professor of economics.

Mathematics isn't my cup of tea, unfortunately.

(5) przed nazwami dziedzin sportowych np.

How long have you been practising judo?

Do you like playing volleyball?

(6) przed rzeczownikami typu **college, church, court, hospital, prison, university, school**, gdy mowa jest o właściwym zastosowaniu danej instytucji np.

Our son has gone to university. He studies law.

The criminal was finally caught and put in prison.

(7) przed rzeczownikiem **home** jeżeli nie jest on poprzedzony zwrotem definiującym lub, gdy poprzedza go czasownik opisujący ruch np.

Will you be at home tomorrow night?

What time did you arrive home yesterday?

ale

*We went to the professor's home.
This the home where the writer lived for three years.*

- (8) przed rzeczownikiem **town** jeżeli mowa jest o mieście, w którym rozmówca mieszka np.

I'm going to town for shopping.

- (9) przed rzeczownikiem **work** jeżeli mowa jest o miejscu pracy np.

Why weren't you at work yesterday?

- (10) przed rzeczownikiem **nature** oznaczającym ‘natura, środowisko’ np.

It's our mutual responsibility to care for nature.

EXERCISE BANK

I. Put **a**, **an**, **the** or ‘–‘ (zero article) in the gaps.

Have you ever wanted to spend (1) night in (2) Elvis Presley's bed and couldn't quite make it to Graceland? Try the 'Hotel Grunewald' in (3) sleepy German spa town of Bad Nauheim where (4) King of Rock 'n' Roll lived in (5) late 1950s while serving as (6) U.S. Army's most famous GI (7) dark wooden double bed, crystal chandelier and heavy oil painting in Room 10 on (8) third floor are just as Elvis left them when he moved to (9) rented house on (10) other side of town. Bad Nauheim and nearby Friedberg, where Elvis served at the U.S. Army's Ray Barracks, are now bracing for (11) invasion of (12) fans from all over (13) Europe who want to commemorate his untimely death in (14) bathroom of his Graceland mansion in Memphis on (15) August 16, 1977. On (16) anniversary of his death from (17) drug-induced heart attack at (18) age of 42, fans bearing candles and tributes will file past the Elvis memorial in front of (19) Hotel Grunewald. Near the small monument and on stages all over town, (20) impersonators and popular singers will bring back to (21) life some of his greatest songs. In (22) addition, there will be (23) musical show re-enacting Presley's rise to stardom, (24) barbecue and (25) guided tour to places where he lived or played football. An exhibition will show (26) great impact his arrival had on (27) area, about 18 miles north of Frankfurt.

Although he didn't give any concerts in Germany, (28) local teenagers idolized Elvis and viewed him as (29) rebel. Even a special cooking course is scheduled, dedicated to (30) man who allegedly ordered one of his planes to fly from Memphis to Denver to pick up his favorite peanut butter and banana sandwiches.

..... (1) astronomers are predicting (2) spectacular display of (3) shooting stars over (4) next few days. (5) dozens of meteors are expected to shoot across (6) sky every hour. (7) shooting stars should be visible as (8) streaks of coloured light in (9) night sky before (10) dawn on (11) Tuesday. 'Tonight we'll probably see - if we're lucky and there's (12) good clear sky - (13) increased number of (14) shooting stars, or (15) meteors as (16) astronomers prefer to call them.', Robin Scagell, of the Society for Popular Astronomy, told (17) BBC. 'It happens at this time of year each year and it's been happening like this as long as (18) people can remember, certainly way back until around (19) beginning of (20) Christian era.', he said.

II. Put **a**, **an**, **the** or ‘–‘ (zero article) in the gaps.

1. implementation of new technology is first step that we're making on way to success.
2. We should make effort to convince members of our association that changes in voting system are indispensable.
3. burglars that broke into historic church in Avebury stole number of valuable artefacts including golden chalice and silver candlesticks from altar.
4. We have just received letter of enquiry from client in Boston. client inquires whether we still have leather coats that were advertised in latest catalogue.
5. Yesterday, our geography teacher told us most interesting story about man called Vigo Petersen who set out on lonely travel to North Pole but whose boat sank in heavy storm.
6. After official lunch, representatives of international organizations participating in symposium, including ICF members, were invited to visit magnificent town.

7. first person to exceed velocity of 250 mph was Colin Dewell from Staple in Arizona. In automobile propelled with special fuel Colin drove at speed of about 265 mph at distance of five kilometres. experiment took place on 11th September 1977 on Mojave Desert in state of California and was well documented by reporters from many local newspapers.
8. Before going down cave we hadn't had idea how big it was. None of us had imagined surprises that were awaiting us down there and little had we known about former inhabitants of place. As we lit our torches and directed light on walls we saw most amazing views in our lives. There were hundreds of wall paintings made by ancient man and most of them were still in perfect condition.
9. We are always as busy as bees on Saturday morning. At this time, we always clean house. I do hovering and dusting whereas my sister, Rita, does the washing-up. My mother always goes shopping to town in morning while at same time my father washes car.
10. Before I started working on project that I was assigned, I went to my boss to ask him for detailed instructions. To my great surprise, when I entered his office, Mr Grey was lying on floor with his legs up and was pretending to be riding bicycle. 'Come in, Dave.', he said. 'I'm just doing exercise to strengthen my back. I've been advised to do so by doctor I went to last week.', he explained.

III. Put a, an, the, some, one or ‘-‘ (zero article) in the gaps.

1. According to weather forecast, there may be showers in afternoon.
2. robbers who stole old paintings from National Gallery have been caught by Police and put in prison.
3. Unfortunately, there are errors in calculations you have made.
4. At greengrocer's round corner, they sell cheap fruit and vegetables. For example, fresh oranges cost only pound kilo.
5. Our neighbour, Mr Chimes, has had heart attack and has been taken to hospital.

6. Thales of Miletus was father of philosophy. He believed that water was basic substance out of which all matter was created.
7. How about going to cinema? I haven't watched good film for months.
8. fishing boat sank during storm that broke out at Barents Sea last night.
9. historians still argue about exact date of appearance of life on Earth.
10. Over thousand fans have arrived in Dublin for concert of their favourite rock band.
11. war may break out in Middle East if conflict between these two countries isn't settled peacefully soon.
12. Bristol used to be Britain's main port for import of tobacco.
13. author of this captivating story spent seven years on desert island after plane on board of which he was travelling crashed into Atlantic Ocean.
14. professor Bowles was lecturing on subject of human rights when I entered conference room.
15. During flood that occurred in spring of 1958, water destroyed majority of houses in Chestnut Street.
16. investigation that was launched after disaster in Lockerbie, in 1988 revealed that terrorists had planted a bomb on board of Pan-Am plane. final death toll amounted to over 270.
17. What's point of learning to drive at age of eighty, Sam?
You cannot even afford to buy car.
18. aspirin is made from salicylic acid which is found in bark of willow tree. As popular remedy for fever and pain it was used by ancient Greeks.
19. For company like ours, it's most important to be able to transfer information in fastest possible way.
20. Come on, boy. Tell me whole truth. In your case honesty is only policy if you hope to escape punishment.

IV. Put a, an, the, some, one or ‘-‘ (zero article) in the gaps.

1. ‘Is country that you come from OPEC member?’
‘No idea. I’m not interested in politics and I don’t know much about economy of my country, either.’
2. ‘Hello. My name is David Copperfield.’
‘Are you David Copperfield?’
‘Of course, not. I’m not David Copperfield famous magician. I’m librarian by profession.’
3. ‘Would you care for black coffee, Mr Donovan?’
‘I’ll have cup. And could you bring me latest issue of *Guardian*, please.’
4. ‘You still owe me thousand pounds plus interest. Unless you bring money tomorrow, I’ll take you to court.’
‘How come? Have you forgotten that deadline for payment is 31st November?’
5. ‘Could you give me lift to airport, please?’
‘Again? It is fifth time this month that you’ve asked me favour.’
6. ‘Can one rely on Simon?’
‘Sure. He’s man of his word. He never forgets about promises he makes.’
7. ‘Who’s head of your department, Bill?’
‘I’m. I’m in charge of Marketing Department and I’m also responsible for training novices.’
8. ‘Have you seen TV remote control?’
‘It must be on table. I put it there before going to bed last night.’
9. ‘I want sugar in my tea. Three teaspoonfuls.’
‘Don’t you know sugar in such big quantities may be bad for health? Hasn’t it ever occurred to you that you might use honey?’
10. ‘Excuse me. Where’s city centre? It’s my first time in city and I’m afraid I’ve got lost.’
‘Go along Hilton Street and turn right at traffic lights. Then go straight forward for about ten minutes until you see Town hall and you’re there.’

KLUCZ

Str. 12 Present Simple - Present Continuous

- I.** 1. a 2. b 3. b 4. a 5. a 6. a 7. b 8. b 9. b 10. b
- II.** 1. doubt, understand, is talking 2. asks, know, is 3. miss/am missing, hope, misses/is missing 4. does Ann look, remember 5. Are you enjoying, are having 6. don't mind, promise 7. teaches, are having, is still recovering 8. says, means 9. am seeing, go 10. is always telling/always tells, does not realize
- III.** 1. a) don't hear b) is hearing c) hear 2. a) explains b) explains c) am explaining 3. a) is spending b) are not spending c) spends 4. a) Do you have/Have you (got) b) are having c) has 5. a) weighs b) weigh c) are weighing
- IV.** 1. kicks, throws, intercepts, passes, chests, makes, hits 2. comes, finds, tells, replies, hurries, dyes, comes, tells, replies, makes 3. appears, hides, prepares, teaches, trains, invites 4. peel, chop, put, fries/is frying, wash, cut 5. deals, draws, risks
- V.** 1. a) looks b) are observing c) am seeing 2. a) sounds b) does not hear c) are always listening to 3. a) hurts b) am aching c) suffers/is suffering 4. a) are considering b) do you think c) Do you realize 5. a) are discovering b) do you find c) explores
- VI.** 1. okay 2. I want to tell . 3. We don't mean 4. okay 5. okay 6. never tells 7. okay 8. okay 9. does not cost 10. okay 11. We all know 12. Someone is breaking 13. are heading 14. I have 15. okay
- VII.** 1. Do you happen to know how much this load weighs? 2. We are leaving at seven sharp. 3. In this profession, physical appearance does not matter. 4. What does the notice read? 5. The children next door are always screaming. 6. We are having new windows installed in the building. 7. It seems (that) Brian is getting well. 8. He is always complaining about the job we do. 9. Miss Watson is still correcting her speech. 10. How much does the electric saw cost?
- VIII.** 1. own 2. look/am looking 3. count 4. possesses 5. means 6. starts 7. tells 8. is increasing 9. is rising 10. makes 11. am coming 12. are putting 13. tastes 14. take/are taking 15. do not sound

Str. 22 Past Simple - Past Continuous

- I.** 1. did you last see 2. came, were playing 3. switched, approached 4. was always coming/always came, had to 5. prescribed, didn't help 6. was ringing, was having 7. lived, moved 8. was walking, heard 9. were becoming, were losing 10. asked, was trying 11. were examining 12. kept, was running 13. were reading, met 14. arrived, was rising 15. was listening, was telling
- II.** 1. met, didn't see, came, said, looked, started, told, was looking, was going 2. rang, picked, heard, asked 3. woke, came, saw, was falling, were, were making, was rolling, was throwing 4. let, told, ended, was sleeping, was still playing 5. called, said, was burning, set, were rushing, collided

- III.** 1. a) was building b) built c) were building 2. a) were seeing b) didn't see c) saw
3. a) were always making b) was making c) made/were making 4. a) was thinking
b) thought c) thought 5. a) were having b) had c) were having
- IV.** 1. Alice pretended 2. It looked 3. Two of us fainted 4. okay (lub made) 5. I jumped and
came up 6. two couples were dancing 7. okay 8. What were you watching 9. We and
our friends spent 10. and asked
- V.** 1. were always quarrelling/always quarrelled, told 2. Were you having, phoned 3. lived
/were living, hired 4. didn't matter, loved, never felt 5. saw, fell 6. established,
worked, died 7. was interviewing, ordered 8. was floating, spotted 9. looked, saw,
was suffering / suffered 10. were firing, were flying, hit 11. went, came, didn't enjoy
12. made, poured 13. went, was blowing, returned 14. Was anyone looking, phoned
15. were sleeping, didn't know
- Str. 29 Present Perfect - Present Simple - Past Simple**
- I.** 1. took, has introduced 2. Have you seen, have lost 3. have known, have never seen
4. have always wanted, have never had 5. have you lived, decided 6. never caused,
turned, has been 7. were, were 8. have bought, wears 9. have received, haven't dealt
10. served, retired, hasn't put on
- II.** 1. a) has Joe tried b) try c) tried 2. a) made b) makes c) have made 3. a) rains
b) rained c) hasn't rained 4. a) haven't had b) had c) have 5. a) have never seen
b) don't see c) saw
- III.** have you climbed, have made, have reached, was, set, stood, was, started, arrived, have
tried, (have) failed, went, went, changed, ran, gave, asked, didn't have, haven't tried,
Have you given up, made, (have) put, has continued, takes
- IV.** 1 has just revealed, has cancelled, have found, caught, went 2. released, have been, want,
depends, haven't set 4. has died, worked, made, received, prepared, started 5. collided,
has sunk, arrived, managed, have just landed 6. has been issued, claim, have seen, have
observed
- V.** 1. Have you ever placed, have done, have been 2. ask, hasn't done, moved 3. have
known, know 4. has improved, Have you taken 5. doesn't remember, have
disappeared 6. Have we got, looks, have taken 7. quarreled, left, haven't seen
8. have introduced, has taken, works 9. Have the police arrived, occurred 10. Do you
care, have already had 11. have observed, did you see 12. has increased, have taken/
take 13. have decided, have always considered 14. has called, apologizes 15. has
dated, hasn't asked
- VI.** 1. Ronald has been/stayed/been staying abroad since he graduated from university.
2. The doctor has not written the prescription yet. 3. How long have you and Muriel
worked/been working together? 4. It is seven years since I last played chess.
5. We have not been to Berlin before. 6. Susan has lost her car keys. 7. We have

co-operated/been co-operating with the warehouse for three years. 8. Terry has been (staying) abroad for eleven months. 9. So far, they have talked to four candidates.
10. I have never eaten snails before.

- VII.** 1. Have you ever played 2. you graduated 3. Were there any people 4. What has happened? 5. We have not known 6. Have you seen 7. since she moved 8. okay
9. What did she tell 10. I have not won

Str. 37 Present Perfect - Present Perfect Continuous

- I.** 1. a 2. a 3. a/b 4. b 5. b 6. a 7. b 8. b 9. a/b 10. a/b
- II.** 1. a) Have you made b) has been making 2. a) have been washing b) have not washed
3. a) have been trying b) have tried 4. a) Have you been playing b) has played
5. a) have not attended b) have been attending 6. a) have never had b) have been having
7. a) has been losing b) have lost 8. a) has worn b) have been wearing
9. a) have been beating b) has beaten 10. a) have booked b) have been booking
- III.** 1. Have you ever climbed, have done 2. have been chopping 3. has never been, have been selling / have sold 4. has just told, has given 5. have done, have failed 6. have you collected, have had 7. have been buying 8. have not seen, has been taking
9. have always destroyed/have always been destroying, have never acted 10. has laid have been making 11. have already eaten, have been trying 12. have kept/have been keeping, have you made 13. have removed, has improved 14. has got, has happened
15. have been drinking, have not sobered
- IV.** have been working/have worked, have gone, have you decided, have taken, have been becoming, have stopped, has come, have you selected, have been considering, has been given, have paid, have been negotiating

Str. 43 Past Perfect - Past Perfect Continuous - Past Simple - Past Continuous

- I.** 1. c 2. a 3. b/d 4. b 5. a 6. b/d 7. a 8. c 9. a/b/c/d 10. a/b/c/d
- II.** 1. a) had been holding b) was holding c) held d) had you held 2. a) were passing b) Had they passed c) had been passing d) passed 3. a) had been recovering b) recovered c) (had) recovered d) was recovering 4. a) had not loaded b) loaded c) was being loaded d) had been loading 5. a) had planted b) had been planting c) (had) planted d) was planting
- III.** 1. died, had coordinated/had been coordinating 2. caught, had set 3. did not realize, had been waiting, had you been sitting 4. had been enjoying, got, began 5. had been driving, dawned, hadn't been going/wasn't going 6. had shaken, occurred 7. were laughing, were performing, had not seen 8. succeeded, had had 9. was, drew, had not given 10. went, had withdrawn 11. touched, was, had been driving 12. had you swallowed, felt, started 13. handed, broke 14. (had) ended, stood, gave, lasted
15. was just showing, smelt, remembered, had been ironing, had forgotten

IV. opened, was lying, saw, were screaming, did not understand, were speaking, had not met, looked, got, were coming, was beginning/began, was going, had hit, (had) lost, had, had been lying, came, knew, realized, was flying, got, wanted, could not, had tied, had never felt, felt, understood

had been walking, found, could, (had) lost, had attacked, had to, reached, had lost, had promised, received, was picking, hoped, had planned, slipped, fell, were running, came was still breathing, put, had carried/had been carrying, breathed, buried, continued, were, found, had left

Str. 52 Future Simple - be going to - Present Continuous - Present Simple

- I.** 1. b/d 2. b 3. a/d 4. a/b/c 5. d 6. c/d 7. d 8. b/d 9. b 10. a
- II.** 1. a) will come b) are coming c) come 2. a) is launching b) are going to build c) are launching/launch 3. a) will have b) is going to have c) am having 4. a) are going to lose b) lose c) will lose 5. a) will take/am taking b) am going to take c) will take
- III.** 1. am going to become, earn, will buy/am going to buy 2. will you tell, will take/is going to take, retire, will make 3. Are you doing, are meeting/are going to meet, will be 4. are you going to do, am going to give/am giving 5. are going to watch, will lend 6. is fighting/is going to fight, will see/are going to see 7. will not tell/am not going to tell, will never let 8. Are you going to move/Are you moving, are going to leave/are leaving 9. will happen, will arrive, will stop 10. Are you going to buy, will buy
- IV.** 1. are having, will meet 2. will stay, (will) take 3. are going, am not going to bet 4. will you be, will wait/am going to wait 5. will stand/is going to stand 6. will back
7. makes 8. will get, will give/am going to give 9. will fall/are going to fall 10. am going to ask, will do 11. Are you going to use 12. will be 13. visits, says 14. will start, will last 15. am playing, will not finish 16. will bring 17. will not remember
18. will do 19. am going to give/will give, will start/start 20. is going to melt
- V.** 1. a 2. c 3. c 4. a 5. a

Str. 59 Future Perfect - Future Perfect Continuous - Future Continuous - Future Simple

- I.** 1. b/d 2. b 3. a 4. d 5. a 6. b 7. b/c/d 8. c/d 9. b/d 10. a/d
- II.** 1. a) are/is playing b) will have played c) will play 2. a) am going to collect b) are collecting c) will have collected/will have been collecting 3. a) will talk b) will be talking c) will have talked 4. a) will be sharing/are going to share b) Will you share c) will share/are going to share 5. a) will have been blowing b) is going to blow c) will have blown
- III.** 1. will you do, Will you drop 2. are going to clean 3. am dating/will be dating 4. will have collected 5. will be seeing/am seeing 6. Are you doing/Are you going to do/

Will you be doing 7. Will Mr Grey explore/Is Mr Grey going to explore/Will Mr Grey be exploring 8. will not answer/am not going to answer 9. will still be minding 10. are going to lose 11. are going to have 12. will not lend 13. will have been waiting/will have waited 14. am coming/will come 15. is driving

- IV.** is planning, will take, will be taking / is taking/is going to take, is going to use, is going to learn, will try/is going to try, will have/are going to have, will be celebrating/are going to celebrate, will be/is going to be, will have been, will not change

Str. 64 be + infinitive/perfect infinitive

- I.** is to meet, are to take
is to leave, is to receive
is to begin, are to arrive, is to welcome
- II.** 1. are to take 2. are we to keep 3. was to have phoned 4. are to do 5. am to write
6. were to have gone 7. was to send 8. are to be 9. was to have started 10. are to get
- III.** 1. All our workers are to abide by the safety regulations. 2. The investments were to have been more profitable. 3. I am to work overtime. 4. We were to have signed the deal. 5. James was to have come back at seven. 6. You are to apologize to the client. 7. Simon was to confirm the arrangements. 8. All candidates are to submit their CVs ... 9. You are not to touch the switches. 10. Am I to act as your spokesman? 11. My alarm-clock was to have gone off at eight a.m. 12. The minister is to deliver his speech at the beginning ... 13. You are not to spread this information. 14. They were to consider our application the following day. 15. The witness was to have appeared in court.

Str. 66 PROGRESS TEST Czasy - Tenses

- I.** broke, was, was staying, had gone, was visiting, had been living/had lived, spread, decided, had left, got, were flying, broke, fell, died, survived, were fishing, saw, hurried, arrived, had died, was, saved, took, (had) got, made, had lived/had been living, came, made

have been arriving, are going to take/will be taking, begins/is to begin, have already sold, did not book, have, have promised, hope/are hoping, says/said, has come, believe, will meet, will take, am going to ask/will ask, will be going, ends, will have played, have been expecting, will make/are going to make, have stored, will be keeping/are going to keep, will be providing/are going to provide

is/has been, saw, set, has written, received, has just met, is going to spend, is enjoying, had been dreaming, had been collecting, succeeded, got, began, had never gone, has always been, will know, has already visited, is heading, has always considered, is going to experience, will match, has always loved, will make, will not want, estimates, returns, will have made, are already looking

- II.** 1. a) do not mind b) will mind c) have been minding 2. a) Had Picasso completed
 b) will have completed c) had not completed 3. a) have been interviewing b) am
 interviewing/will be interviewing c) interviewed 4. a) has been increasing
 b) will have increased c) are going to increase/are increasing 5. a) had been
 expecting b) will be expecting c) had been expecting
- III.** 1. began, has laid 2. was thinking/have been thinking, has started/is starting, have
 changed 3. will not do, will help 4. do not mind, object 5. (had) graduated, began,
 has not found 6. are being, will make 7. have arranged, are meeting/are going to
 meet 8. declared, had dated, (had) matched 9. Have you been digging, look, have
 never seen 10. never talked, has been 11. woke, heard, thought, had broken, was
 looking, remembered, had agreed, realized, was hunting 12. will not see, will have
 died 13. had run, had not bought 14. have been trying, wonder/am wondering, has
 been talking 15. have been settling, announced, have made
- IV.** 1. Simon thinks he will obtain/is going to obtain the position . . . 2. We have not had
 storms like this for many years. 3. When we (had) completed the research, we were
 given . . . 4. He is always telling the same boring stories. 5. Since when have you
 been working/have you worked as a junior clerk? 6. We are meeting in the casino at
 eleven. 7. This area has changed since I lived here. 8. Do you happen to know what
 Frank is going to do? 9. We have had this computer only for a week. 10. Where were
 you when the bomb exploded? 11. I had never gone abroad (before). 12. We are
 playing the final game on Friday. 13. How do you find this idea? 14. By the time the
 ambulance arrived, the man had died. 15. We haven't interviewed the candidates yet.
- V.** have you composed/have you been composing, was, wrote, used, became, remember,
 will have done/will have been doing, is/has been, performed, will your fans see, am
 not going to do, have not thought, (had) had, managed, keep, have devoted, wish

Str. 75 Czasowniki modalne - can, could, may, might

- I.** 1. a/c 2. a/b/c/d 3. b/c 4. b/d 5. a/c 6. b/c/d 7. a/d 8. b 9. b/c 10. a/b/c
- II.** 1. may/might/could + (g) have taken a day off 2. may/might/can/could + (d) result in
 serious health problems 3. may/might/could + (b) have discovered that he was being
 followed 4. may/might/could + (a) have been promised a promotion 5. may/might/
 could + (j) not want to share his experiences 6. can/could + (f) not have scored a goal
 7. may/might/could + (h) not be aware of 8. can + (c) make you lose your temper
 9. may/might/could + (e) have a love affair 10. may/might/could + (i) have been set on
 fire
- III.** 1. could not have + been 2. may/might/could + be threatening/threaten/have threatened
 3. may/might/could + have told 4. may/might/could + be 5. may/might/could + spend
 6. cannot/could not + be 7. may/might/could + Erika have experienced/have been
 experiencing 8. may/might/could + be having 9. may/might + not have known
 10. may/might/can/could + get

- IV.** 1. Vincent may/might/could be in the possession of the files ... 2. Frank cannot/could not know the password. 3. Mrs Adams may/might/could have thought the man was 4. The temperature may/might/can/could be lower up in the mountains. 5. John may/might not have realized he was 6. My children could not have broken the window. 7. This scheme may/might/could bring no benefit at all. 8. Speeding motorists can constitute a great danger to 9. May/Might/Could the sergeant have ignored the captain's order? 10. Their offer may/might/could have been the most attractive of all.

Str. 80 Can, could + infinitive/perfect infinitive, be able to

- I.** 1. a/c 2. a/b/c 3. c 4.b 5. a/b 6. b/c 7. a 8. a/b/c 9. a/c 10. a/b/c
- II.** 1. could + (e) have misunderstood the instructions 2. can/could/is able to + (g) arrange a meeting for you 3. could + (b) not fall asleep/was not able to fall asleep 4. could/was able to + (i) remember people's phone numbers 5. could + (f) not deliver the letters/was not able to deliver the letters 6. can/am able to + (a) do everything by myself 7. could have + (j) lent you some money 8. will be able to + (d) go up and repair the aerial 9. could/was able to + (c) play by ear 10. can + (h) not hear well/is not able to hear well
- III.** 1. can/is able to + repair 2. could not + have been 3. could never/was never able to + keep 4. could + have caused 5. cannot/am not able to + make 6. could not/was not able to + listen to 7. will I be able to/can/could I + see 8. could never/was never able to/had never been able to + fulfil 9. could + have had 10. cannot + wait

Str. 85 May, might, can, could, be allowed to

- I.** 1. a/b/c/d 2. a/c 3. b/c 4. a/b/d 5. a/b/c/d 6. b/c 7. a/c/d 8. a/b/d 9. a/b/c/d 10. c
- II.** 1. Can/Could/May/Might/Am I allowed to + invite 2. could not/might not/were not allowed to use 3. have you not been allowed to drive 4. could not/might not/was not allowed to + do 5. Can/Could/May/Might/Am I allowed to + ask 6. could not / were not allowed to + bathe 7. will be allowed/are allowed/can/may + read 8. could/might/ would be allowed to + spend 9. can/may/is allowed to + act 10. has not been allowed to eat

Str. 89 Have (got) to, need to, must

- I.** 1.a/c/d 2. a/b/d 3. a/b/c/d 4. b/c/d 5. a/b/c/d 6. b/d 7. a/b/c 8. b/d 9. a/b/c/d 10. c
- II.** 1. has had to do 2. didn't have to/didn't need to/hadn't got to + renovate 3. will have to/ have (got) to/must + provide 4. must/has (got) to + be 5. having to swallow 6. must/ has (got) to + go out 7. must not dive 8. had had to undergo 9. Must we/Do we have to/Do we need to/Have we got to + salute 10. must have contained/had (got) to contain

Str. 91 Didn't have to, didn't need to, needn't have done

- I. 1. a 2. a 3. b 4. a 5. b 6. a 7. a 8. a 9. b 10. b
- II. 1. needn't have installed 2. needn't have carried 3. needn't have done 4. didn't have to redecorate 5. needn't have made 6. didn't have to stay 7. didn't have to wait 8. needn't have printed 9. didn't have to hire 10. didn't have to pay

Str. 94 Should/ought to + infinitive/perfect infinitive

- I. 1. should have informed 2. should know 3. should not have behaved 4. should not have taken 5. should have mended 6. should have proposed 7. should not waste 8. Should I have accepted 9. should be delivered 10. should have followed
- II. 1. ought to have + (d) seen a specialist 2. . ought to + (f) know better 3. ought not to have + (h) teased it 4. ought to + (a) take rash decisions 5. ought to + (j) have taken 6. ought to + (b) wear come warm clothes 7. ought to + (e) have charged it 8. ought not to + (g) have invested the money 9. Ought I to + (i) bring my wife flowers 10. ought not to + (c) be any fights

Str. 101 Shall, should, will, would

- I. 1. Shall 2. would 3. will/would 4. should 5. will 6. shall/will 7. Shall/Should 8. should 9. shall/will 10. will/would 11. will/shall 12. will 13. will 14. shall 15. should 16. should 17. would 18. shall 19. shall 20. will
- II. 1. Will/Would + you repeat 2. should be 3. shall/will + fight 4. would not eat 5. will/should + be 6. Shall/Should I buy 7. will not start 8. should become 9. Will you have 10. will not tell 11. should have 12. would have enjoyed 13. should not work 14. should get 15. will bark 16. shall be 17. would not have 18. Shall/Should I leave 19. will/should + have ended 20. should be

Str. 104 Used to

- I. 1. used to socialize 2. Did Alice use to/Used Alice to + commute 3. used to produce 4. used to depend 5. used to fear 6. used to inhabit 7. used to consider 8. didn't use(d) to/usedn't to + suffer 9. used to invest 10. didn't use(d) to/usedn't to + charge
- II. 1.used to 2. used to/would, used to/would, used to/would 3. used to 4. used to/would 5. used to/would, used to/would 6. used to/would, used to/would, used to/would, used to/would 7. used to, used to 8. used to 9. used to/would, used to/would 10. used to

Str. 106 PROGRESS TEST Czasowniki modalne - Modal verbs

- I. 1. d 2. a/d 3. a/b/c 4. c/d 5. a/b/c 6. b/d 7. b/c 8. b/c/d 9. a/d 10. c 11. c 12. a/c 13. b/c/d 14. a/d 15. c/d 16. a 17. b/c/d 18. a/c/d 19. b 20. a/c/d

- II.** 1. a) will have arrived b) needn't have arrived c) shall we arrive 2. a) could not play
 b) must not play c) would play 3. a) might have told b) ought not to have told
 c) Will you tell 4. a) would do b) should have done c) shall not do 5. a) need not/
 don't need to + cover b) must cover c) could not have covered
- III.** 1. May Brian spend much time outdoors? 2. You should not have spoken to the man so rudely. 3. Those black dressed blokes must have been following you. 4. Jack didn't use to be so nervous in the past. 5. Somebody could have taken your briefcase by mistake. 6. Need we/Do we need to + fill in the immigration forms? 7. It can not be Tessa. 8. Shall I bring you another glass of wine, sir? 9. The enemy could not have known our secret code. 10. You ought not to have cheated on your wife. 11. The engine won't start. 12. Your employees may have been dissatisfied with the working conditions. 13. One/You must not take photographs inside the museum. 14. Steven would be a very gentle person. 15. You need not have paid my bill. 16. Mr Wings will have already retired. 17. Were you able to swim as well as I can when you were my age? 18. Adam has (got) to walk the dog. 19. John could have been sleeping when you phoned him. 20. You should have notified the police of the collision.

Str. 116 Strona bierna - Passive

- I.** 1. has just been announced, will be transformed, have been used, were built, have not been renovated, has been discovered, has been made, should be forbidden
 2. were notified, was/had been planted, was/were called, was detected, (was) defused, had been taken, was prevented, was hurt
 3. will be exposed/are to be exposed, be opened, were painted, are depicted, is expected, will be appreciated, is estimated, will have been visited, is closed, will be selected, will be awarded
 4. are known, has been informed, have been/were found, were/had been attacked, (were/had been) crippled, were taken, treated, are being taken, will be saved
 5. are written, (are) sent, are expressed, was delivered, be presented, be given, be read, (be) sorted, be delivered
- II.** 1. Are we supposed, were cleaned, be greased 2. arrived, were/had been wiped, was/had been laid 3. came, was wearing, asked, had happened, told, had been bitten 4. are you carrying, have been ordered, are being/will be collected, be loaded 5. be changed, had been warned, wouldn't have invested 6. haven't the carpets been beaten, be done, started, (has) absorbed, has been won, has won 7. has happened, has disappeared, have been eaten, wore 8. being asked/having been asked, was stopped, was walking, gave 9. has made, haven't been paid, have done/have been doing, was given
 10. have you been treated, have been staying, occurred, was it caused
- III.** 1. Mr Hubbard is known to have been offered bribes on many occasions. 2. The information shouldn't have been revealed before the official publication. 3. The tanker seems to have been hit by a torpedo. 4. Simon will be offered a higher salary.
 5. They would like the cost of the operation to be covered by me. 6. I am anxious that the matter (should) be settled as soon as possible. 7. You are considered to be their

- greatest adversary by them. 8. It may have been discovered that the invoices were not signed by you. 9. The computer must have been left on by Ronald. 10. The ancient treasure has not been found yet. 11. You can't have been abducted by a UFO.
12. Who have the missing files been recovered by? 13. The wreck of the ship is claimed to have been finally found. 14. The portrait is believed to have been painted by an unknown artist. 15. I was told to keep guard the whole night.

- IV.** have been made, have changed, Had you been given, was handed, being approached/ having been approached, happened, have not been informed, have not been paid, was promised/have been promised, Have you found, have been invited, have decided, will you know, are given/will be given, will be told, am accepted, will you do, are not given, will keep, am offered,

Str. 122 Tryb warunkowy 0 - Conditional 0

- I. 1. If there is no air in the lake, fish die. 2. If you brake hard, the tyres squeal. 3. If someone is caught shoplifting, the police arrest them. 4. If you drink too much alcohol, you suffer from hangover the next day. 5. If you get caught trespassing, you have to pay a fine. 6. If you pull the pin out of the grenade, it explodes. 7. If you don't see well, you wear glasses. 8. If you cook milk for too long, it boils over. 9. If you cut onion, you cry. 10. If you catch a cold, you sneeze and cough

Str. 127 Tryb warunkowy I - Conditional I

- I.** 1. If Frank refuses to go to hospital, he may get worse. 2. If I find employment soon, I will be able to provide for my family. 3. If Susan does not know how to invest her money, she should consult an adviser. 4. If we are not granted a mortgage, we will not build a house. 5. If the private refuses to carry out the captain's order, he may be punished for insubordination. 6. Unless this heavy wind stops blowing, more rooftops may be destroyed. 7. If people do not stop hunting the endangered species, the species will go extinct. 8. Should there be a flu epidemic, more of the medicine will be needed 9. If the peace talks turn out to be a failure, the war may start anew. 10. If you do not enter the correct password, the alarm will go off.

- II.** 1. will 2. only, would 3. happen 4. will 5. won't 6. care 7. should 8. chance
9. should 10. unless

- III.** 1. Should there be another power cut, unplug . . . 2. If you happen to lose your way in the mountains . . . 3. No wonder it smells in the room if the will smoke cigarettes here. 4. Provided (that) you don't destroy my flowerbed, you may play in the garden. 5. Unless the fans stop fighting, the game will not be resumed. 6. If David won't change his mind, he may . . . 7. Suppose (that) the alarm clock doesn't go off. 8. Stop sneering at me; otherwise I will not talk to you again. 9. If you should find/Should you find my contact lens, store it . . . 10. If by any chance the headphones go wrong, we will exchange . . . 11. Cheat again and we will not play cards with you any more. 12. You must apply/Apply this ointment regularly or else your wounds will not heal. 13. If Tom has passed his final exams, he must be very happy. 14. If only my father would not be so strict. 15. If you will hang on a second, I will put you through.

Str. 133 Tryb warunkowy II - Conditional II

- I.** 1. If Edward had some capital, he could set up a private company. 2. If the Nortons had a farm, they would keep livestock. 3. If Jenny did not make mistakes in writing, she would get better marks. 4. If the juice were not so bitter, it would taste much better. 5. If the flat belonged to us, we could furnish it the way we liked it. 6. If our parents knew about the party, they might object strongly. 7. If the dictionary contained more entries, it would be much more useful. 8. If the trees did not grow in front of our house, there would be more light inside. 9. If Jack could think fast, he could make a good analyst. 10. If I were going deep-sea fishing, I might catch a big marlin.
- II.** 1. were 2. for 3. only 4. Would 5. Were 6. But 7. Suppose 8. by 9. shoes 10. would
- III.** 1. If he had someone to rely on, he would be a happier man. 2. Were I to coach the national team, I would need 3. You might cause quite a stir if you spread the gossip. 4. If only we had oxygen bottles, we could dive deep. 5. If I were to change my mind, I would let you know first. 6. Suppose the mobile phone didn't function properly. 7. If we had enough evidence, we would be able to solve the case. 8. If I were in your place, I wouldn't dye 9. If you would re-write your curriculum vitae, sir. 10. If it were not for Christina's assistance, we would not make
11. Would I be allowed to eat roast meat if my stomach was perfectly all right?
12. What would you do if they wouldn't co-operate with you? 13. But for you, we wouldn't know 14. If by any chance water got inside the camera, it might break down. 15. Were it not for our sponsors' money, our association would not exist.

Str. 137 Tryb warunkowy III - Conditional III

- I.** 1. If Janet had left a message for me, I would have known what time we were going. 2. If the questions had not been too difficult, I would have passed the exam. 3. If the engine had been working well, the pilots would not have been worrying. 4. If you had handled the glasses with care, they would not have got broken. 5. If Eddie had had a valid passport, he could have passed/would have been allowed to pass the border. 6. If I had had some money on me, I would have lent some to Ann. 7. If the flight trajectory had been well calculated, the probe would not have missed its destination. 8. If I had not been taking a shower, I would have been able to pick up the phone. 9. If there had been enough evidence, the judge would not have dismissed the case. 10. If the Czech competitor had not been taking drugs, the committee would not have disqualified him.
- II.** 1. Hadn't the gas installation been leaky, the explosion would not have occurred. 2. If you had not wasted the last box of matches, we could make a bonfire now. 3. Had the minister listened to his advisors, he wouldn't have made such mistakes. 4. But for Collin, we would not have designed the project. 5. If we were to have explored the cave, we would have needed our specialist equipment. 6. Jason might have suffered from injuries if he had been inside the burning house. 7. If it had not been for the other driver's quick reaction, the cars would have collided. 8. If Steven had revised for the exam, he could answer the questions. 9. I would have understood more of the

film if the people in front of us had not been talking aloud all the time. 10. Hadn't it been for your great involvement, the whole venture would have been a failure.

Str. 138 PROGRESS TEST Tryby warunkowe - Conditionals

- I. 1. a/d 2. c 3. b/d 4. a/b/d 5. b 6. a/b/c/d 7. b/d 8. b/d 9. c 10. d
- II. 1. Were 2. should 3. will 4. Suppose 5. for 6. happen 7. would 8. for 9. Unless 10. if 11. were 12. would 13. Had 14. else 15. Were
- III. 1. had told, would still be 2. does not stop, will be 3. offered, would you sell 4. had, would tell 5. had added, would have tasted 6. does not consult, will have to 7. would be enjoying, knew 8. would not have forgiven, had brought 9. will you tell, discovers 10. took, would learn 11. had not been, would have set 12. hit, would be 13. would have played 14. finds/found, will you explain/would you explain 15. might improve, ate
- IV. 1. If Jason forgets to pick me up from the airport, I will be angry at him. 2. Hadn't we had the members' cards, we would have had to wait in the line. 3. If you open the door, swarms of mosquitoes come into the house. 4. You could have travelled alone if you had been over 10, then. 5. If people understood the problem, they would pay more attention to it. 6. Were it not for Joseph, we would still be dragging behind with our work. 7. Open the door or (else)/otherwise we'll have to use force. 8. If it hadn't been for horrible traffic jams all along the way, we would not have come late. 9. You might be able to afford more if you saved more. 10. If we slam the door, our father hits the roof. 11. Should you hear strange noises coming from inside, turn off the machine. 12. Unless the situation gets better, stricter security measures will be introduced. 13. But for my sister's help, I wouldn't cope with minding my five children. 14. If the paint had not been dripping on the carpet, it would not have damaged it. 15. If anyone of you happens to feel worse, press the red button.

Str. 144 Wish + Past Simple/Past Continuous/Past Perfect

- I. 1. I wish I was/were not so busy in the afternoon. 2. Frank wishes he had taken a photo of the unique bird. 3. We wish our products sold well. 4. Judy wishes she had not forgotten about Michael's birthday. 5. Steve wished he did not have to work so long every day. 6. I wish my brother told/would tell me about his problems. 7. We wished we had taken the map. 8. Robert wishes he knew Alice's phone number. 9. The children wish their parents read/would read them bedtime stories. 10. I wish I had not made such a silly mistake.

Str. 145 Would rather/sooner

- I. 1. would rather Tom studied 2. would rather have 3. would rather have bought 4. would rather you did not invite 5. would rather you paid 6. would rather you did 7. would rather have worked 8. would rather watch 9. would rather eat 10. would rather you did not borrow

Str. 147 It's (high/about) time

- I.** 1. is (high) time + (c) you found yourself a decent job 2. is (high) time + (j) we went/were going out 3. is (high) time + (f) he had a rest 4. is (high) time + (a) you settled your debts 5. is (high) time + (i) you went to a barber 6. is (high) time + (e) you bought a new pair 7. is (high) time + (g) he stopped acting like a child 8. is (high) time + (h) you made a choice 9. is (high) time + (d) they cleaned it 10. is (high) time + (b) you greased the hinges

Str. 148 As if /as though

- I.** 1. were 2. were suffering 3. had 4. were 5. had broken 6. is snoring 7. were 8. have just seen 9. had known 10. have

Str. 149 Had better

- I.** 1. had better + (d) drive carefully 2. had better + (j) not touch it 3. had better + (f) not add it in your coffee 4. had better + (a) inform them in advance 5. had better + (e) not talk aloud 6. had better + (h) not walk on the ice 7. had better + (c) not leave any food on the table 8. had better + (i) keep the documents in a safe place 9. had better + (g) change the shampoo 10. had better + (b) turn the music down a bit

Str. 150 PROGRESS TEST Nierzeczywisty czas przeszły - Unreal past

- I.** 1. would 2. sooner 3. better 4. though 5. about 6. have 7. were 8. as 9. time
10. would
- II.** 1. came 2. had taken 3. took 4. keep 5. not feed 6. have got 7. knew 8. used 9. were
10. had not changed 11. did 12. not touch 13. found 14. taught 15. would rain/rained
- III.** 1. Hadn't you better inform your superiors about the system failure? 2. It is high time we were going. 3. We would rather Angela consulted her decision with her parents. 4. I wish I had had my video camera. 5. Wendy speaks as if she understood the theory. 6. I'd sooner observe animals than hunt them. 7. You had better not leave the baby unattended. 8. I'd rather have had the appointment much later. 9. Joseph wished he was/were able to provide for his family. 10. Would you rather have the test postponed or write it now? 11. The first candidate looked as though he was/were a well-educated person. 12. I wish my parents would give/gave me some pocket money. 13. I'd sooner have attended professor Atkinson's lecture. 14. Isn't it about time the boat sailed to the sea? 15. Howard wished he had accepted the job offer.

Str. 163 Mowa zależna - Indirect Speech

- I.** 1. loves 2. went/goes 3. had been built 4. will stop 5. had seen 6. prefers 7. was
8. was still going on 9. kept 10. had been run down
- II.** 1. 1 g 2. c 3. b 4. i 5. a 6. j 7. h 8. e 9. d 10. f

III. 1. b/c 2. a/c 3. a/b/c 4. a/b 5. a/b/c 6. c 7. a/b/c 8. b/c 9. b/c 10. a/b/c

- IV.** 1. The assistant pointed out that the exchange rate was increasing. 2. The farmer warned us not to drink/that we should not drink the pond water. 3. My mother reminded me that I was driving/to drive her to the station that night. 4. Mr Bleak apologized to the customer for overcharging/having overcharged him. 5. The girl expected that her granny would visit them the following week./The girl expected her granny to visit them the following week. 6. Ryan invited me (to come) to his party that Saturday. 7. The student admitted sleeping/that he was sleeping during the lecture. 8. The teacher ordered us to clean the staircase and rake the fallen leaves./The teacher ordered that we should clean the staircase and rake the fallen leaves. 9. The shop owner allowed the children to take as many sweets as they liked. 10. One of the scouts volunteered to chop the wood.

- V.** 1. Jim's father told him that he must be/to be careful when he drove in the city center. 2. The customer said that if those problems arose again, he would have to make a complaint. 3. Mrs Hobson insisted on speaking to the manager. 4. The children regretted not going/that they were not going to the cinema with Helen and Gary. 5. Tom mentioned that he had seen Bill carrying a briefcase like mine the previous day. 6. Mr Webb complimented his wife on her tasty meals. 7. My friend advised me to call/ that I (should) call/my calling the police. 8. The analyst suspected that there had been more dissatisfied customers. 9. They informed us that they had been trying to find a good solution to the problem. 10. Alice accused Vicky of spreading/having spread the gossip.

Str. 169 Pytania w mowie zależnej

- I.** 1. Mrs Lee asked her husband when he was going to buy the car insurance. 2. The reporter inquired what had caused the flooding the previous year. 3. Brian wanted to know if I still worked in the shoe factory. 4. The inspector asked who was/had been responsible for the damage. 5. My brother asked me what I would be doing that time the following day. 6. The manager wanted to know if there had been any important messages for him. 7. Mike wondered what he would do if he failed the exam. 8. The professor asked his students if anyone of them was truly interested in DNA engineering. 9. The assistant wondered if/whether that letter had been delivered the previous Monday. 10. The bank clerk inquired if I had filled in the form. 11. The journalist asked who the leader of our team was. 12. The boy wanted to know how often he should feed the goldfish. 13. Mr Bowles inquired since when the new motorway had been built. 14. Patricia wondered what she should/would do when she grew up. 15. The elderly man wondered who could have done a thing like that.

Str. 170 PROGRESS TEST Mowa zależna - Indirect speech

- I.** 1. The customer complained about the soup/that his soup was too salty. 2. The assistant offered to bring me a cup of coffee. 3. The man informed me that my vacuum cleaner could not be repaired. 4. Mrs Grant suspected the neighbours' children of destroying/ having destroyed their flowers./Mrs Grant suspected that the neighbours' children

had destroyed their flowers. 5. The owner invited the visitors to walk around his/her farm. 6. Nicky advised me to ask/that I (should) ask/my asking Gina to marry me.
7. My teacher asked me how I would explain/to explain my yesterday's absence.
8. Pete encouraged me to ask Cindy to go out with me the next evening. 9. Our captain told us to get dressed immediately. 10. The employer assured me that my application would be considered.

II. 1. when he had decided to become a writer 2. it was about ten years before that he had written his first stories 3. how many books he had written by that time 4. twenty two of his books had been published up to then 5. if/whether he only wrote fiction and drama books 6. he had written a fantasy book too, but it hadn't been published by then 7. if/whether Mr Howe was writing anything then 8. he was writing a romance for a change 9. where Mr Howe got ideas from his books from 10. he observed people and their behaviour very carefully and it was the best basis for his books. 11. if/whether Mr Howe travelled much 12. he did and that he had been to most European countries and that the following year he was going to travel across Asia. 13. if/whether Mr Howe wrote books while he travelled 14. he did not and that he only made observations and took down important notes. 15. thanked Mr Howe warmly for the interview

III. 1. he was sure he had not met that man before 2. taking/that they (should) take a dog from the animal shelter 3. that the report (should) be finished by the following day 4. me to open the window 5. that he had been/to have been abducted by aliens several times 6. when I would be meeting James 7. me to call/that I should call the plumber 8. it was about time the children were going to school 9. the burglars must have known he was out 10. who lived in the house whose roof had been blown away 11. whether to take another loan 12. if/whether I would have taken the job if they had offered me a higher salary 13. that he had revealed/revealing/having revealed the my secret to anyone 14. if/whether I had had any better offers that day 15. to let me go earlier that day if I came at six the next day.

IV. 1. I have not revised for the exam yet. 2. Am I going to get a rise next year? 3. I will not sign a blank cheque. 4. I would rather spend Christmas in the mountains.
5. I have no idea who has been sitting in your chair. 6. How long had the party been going on when the police arrived? 7. The trees may/might have been knocked over by a tornado. 8. Will there be any more speeches before the unofficial part of the conference begins? 9. Don't push other children. 10. In the previous years, the prices of food didn't use to go up so often.

Str. 184 Bezokolicznik - Infinitive

I. 1. to 2. to, to 3. (to) 4. to, - , To 5. To, to 6. to, - 7. to, to 8. To, to 9. to 10. - , - 11. to 12. - , - , to 13. to, to 14. - , to, to 15. - , to 16. To, to 17. to, to 18. to, to 19. to 20. to, (to)

II. 1. a/b/c 2. a/b 3. a/b/c 4. a/c 5. b/c 6. a/b 7. b 8. a 9. c 10. a/b

- III.** 1. Wendy is considered to be a talented lawyer. 2. The snowman seems to be melting.
3. You were seen to copy the classified documents. 4. I did not intend to scuba dive.
5. It is very pleasant to talk about your dreams at night. 6. Mr Wilkins is said to have
been operated on for a brain tumour. 7. There is nothing more we can do but wait
patiently. 8. Mrs Dickinson's children were allowed to eat as much ice cream as they
wanted to. 9. It was rather impolite of you to have told these people to go out.
10. I was made to sign the declaration.

- IV.** 1. Erik made a suggestion to dispose of the toxic waste. 2. Howard pretends to be more
important than he really is. 3. The rescuers failed to find one of the missing
fishermen. 4. You are free to use our equipment. 5. Janice found it hard to learn all
these Latin equivalents. 6. The most skiers are expected to arrive in the spa next
week. 7. I had so little money left that I could not afford to go on the trip. 8. Tigers
are too wild and unpredictable to be kept at home. 9. I can't wait to meet my
American cousins. 10. Aunt sue tends to burst out crying if you mention her dead
son's name.

Str. 191 Gerund

- I.** 1. b 2. b 3. a/c 4. b/c 5. a 6. c 7. a/b 8. c 9. c 10. a/c
- II.** 1. a) denied b) objected 2. a) fancy b) appreciate 3. a) apologize b) regret 4. a) mind
b) mean 5. a) avoided b) missed 6. a) escape b) prevent 7. a) favour b) prefer
8. a) considering b) thinking 9. a) resumed b) recalled 10. a) insisted b) proposed
- III.** 1. ... my changing my daily diet. 2. ... the children('s) slamming the door. 3. ... getting
frostbite if you don't put the gloves on. 4. ... exceeding/having exceeded the speed
limit. 5. ... our taking off. 6. ... being referred to like that. 7. ... leaving the camp
without our guides' permission. 8. ... our picking fruit from his apple trees.
9. ... being asked to fill in some form. 10. ... eating the whole of it.
- IV.** 1. The kids look forward to going on holiday. 2. Carl denied having ruined the frying
pan. 3. This job involves working in shifts. 4. The young man discovered that
learning to navigate was hard. 5. We have decided to postpone shooting the final
scene. 6. Applying the substance in low temperature is not advisable. 7. The
supervisors kept the prisoners working without a break. 8. I don't understand her
being so stubborn. 9. Our drivers reported being stopped/having been stopped at the
border. 10. His being considered a crook doesn't surprise anyone of us.

Str. 199 PROGRESS TEST Bezokolicznik (*Infinitive*) - Gerund

- I.** 1. b/d 2. d 3. b/d 4. a/d 5. b/d 6. b 7. c/d 8. c 9. a/c/d 10. a
- II.** 1. to build, to lay 2. to know, to have been 3. ignoring, carry 4. greasing/to be greased,
creaking 5. tracking, asking, to locate 6. to let, go, to learn, to cope 7. to pay, to do,
to call 8. to start, stealing/to steal 9. breaking/having broken, threatening/having
threatened, to kill 10. to become, to become 11. to have gained, to have been traded

12. investing, losing, to generate 13. rescuing/having rescued, being called/to be called
14. overhauling/to overhaul, to stop, functioning 15. putting, coming 16. smelling/to smell, to move 17. to go, having, flying 18. flying, to close, opening 19. to win, to return 20. not paying, not to make, to trouble/troubling

III. going, to start, getting/to get, setting, not to believe, to travel, preparing/to prepare, persuading, to trust, doing, to take

waiting, chatting, to try, to ease, to be, experiencing, to perform, to see, to come, keeping, exposing

having to, cross, creep, to make, to take, show, to be, giving up, crossing, displaying, to pluck up, to take

IV. 1. Do you recollect telling Richard to move out? 2. I don't mind your and your friends' swimming in my pool. 3. The doctor seemed to have prescribed the wrong medicine. 4. We have made/taken a decision not to make another performance. 5. I couldn't resist asking him that question. 6. This boring comedy is not worth watching/being watched. 7. We appreciated Joseph's lending/having lent us the money. 8. The Australian swimmer failed to beat the world record. 9. I'm longing to see my children. 10. Do they allow smoking in the laboratory? 11. Parking here means having to buy a parking ticket. 12. The young man prefers delivering letters to sorting them. 13. It's no use trying to convince Sarah. 14. I recommend your forgetting about the boy as quickly as possible. 15. I am not accustomed to being called by my second name. 16. The car appeared to have been stolen a week earlier. 17. I insist on my employees wearing the badges. 18. Ms Damond devoted her later life to helping the poor and homeless. 19. They were overheard to say that they were going to rob a bank. 20. The official acknowledged having been offered a bribe.

Str. 206 Zdania dopełnieniowe - *That clauses*

- I.** 1. It seems that Joe has discovered what we're being up to. 2. People say that the team is/are losing their popularity. 3. Mary recommended that I (should) respect the principles. 4. Thomas has promised that he will keep in touch with the headquarters. 5. Alice denied that she had received a love letter from Daniel. 6. I will never forget that you have been standing/have stood/stood by me. 7. Everybody says that the factory discharges effluent into the local river. 8. We hope that our son will become a successful lawyer. 9. Jerry advised that I (should) write a complaint. 10. People believed that the actress had had a love affair with the President.
- II.** 1. did not remember 2. assured 3. realized 4. insisting 5. wished 6. guess 7. appears 8. established 9. occurred 10. fear

Str. 210 Imiesłowy - The participles

- I.** 1. Coming back home, I realized it had been broken into. 2. Being an experienced manager, Frank knows how to approach the task. 3. Having been stopped by the

police, I didn't get in time for the performance. 4. The buildings requiring to be renovated/being renovated are on the list. 5. Sarah signed the agreement saying that its terms didn't appeal to her./Signing the agreement Sarah said its

6. The river burst its banks flooding the small mountain village./Bursting its banks, the river flooded 7. Not expecting to come across any more trouble, we resumed the research. 8. Opening the window, Eva heard her neighbours talking about her.

9. (Being) terrified of the darkness, Tina decided not to go down the cave. 10. Having set up the camp, the climbers started discussing their next move. 11. The marines (being) considered for the task are all well-trained. 12. Susan smiled at her boss not wanting to show a sign of irritation./Smiling at her boss, Susan didn't want to show a sign of irritation. 13. The cyclist run down by a lorry is being treated in the local hospital. 14. (Being) annoyed with the delay, Mick complained aloud. 15. Having been given a warm welcome, the guests were shown to their rooms.

- II.** 1. Having recovered, expressing 2. applying, challenging 3. Having been warned, not exceeding 4. (Being) asked, preparing 5. being, looking 6. Having collected/Collecting, ordered 7. Having, set 8. Passing, masked, terrorizing 9. (Being) alarmed, beating 10. (Being) bored, not asking 11. occupying, trying 12. borrowed 13. Having worked, being acquainted 14. (Being) interested, pricking up 15. Having found out, promising

Str. 220 Zdania względne - Realitive clauses

- I.** 1. ND 2. D 3. ND 4. ND 5. D 6. D 7. ND 8. D 9. ND 10. ND
- II.** 1. whose 2. which 3. which/that 4. who/that 5. which 6. where 7. which 8. who/that 9. who 10. that/which 11. whose 12. who, that/which 13. which 14. which/that, which/that 15. which, What
- III.** 1. We have incurred losses which/that amount to over 2. Over sixty artists took part in the charity concert which/that was organized in 3. The stream (which/that) we had to cross was rather deep. 4. Pete apologized to the girl (who(m)) he had mistaken for his 5. I've got acquainted with a boy whose both parents are of Indian origin. 6. Is Sally going to pay for the damage (which/that) she has caused to a stranger's car? 7. That is the boy (who/that) the younger children are afraid of. 8. The man (who/that) they tried to rob at night turned out to be a karate master. 9. The place (which/that) I saw on the photo looked exactly like the place I came from. 10. The foreigners whose luggage hadn't been delivered on time made a complaint.
- IV.** 1. Joanna Parker, who found it hard to cope with doing the accounts, has been transferred from the accounting department to the marketing department. 2. I've heard Chris, whose extravagancies we have always had to put up with, is being sacked this month. 3. Before her death, the elderly woman disclosed the family secret, which she had guarded for over fifty years. 4. The Pope lives in Vatican, which is the smallest independent country in the world. 5. The French climbers, several of whom suffered from acute frostbite, were picked up by a helicopter. 6. We rely on David, who has never abandoned us in trouble. 7. The luxury hotel, where the foreign guests were

accommodated, is owned by one of the ministers' wife. 8. Mr Gordon, whose wife gave a birth to a son last night, has been in high spirits. 9. There are not more than fifty of the eagles, all of which can only be seen in zoos. 10. We have been considering Christine, who is a skilled and talented employee, for the managerial post.

- V. 1. The storm may not subside so fast, which is what I am afraid of the most. 2. It was pine desks that we ordered, not chestnut ones. 3. The villa the walls of which are painted pink belongs to a local eccentric. 4. The morning in which the war broke out was sunny and hot. 5. Simon is not making much progress at school, which worries me a lot. 6. Eddie, who we were invited by, started working for the firm last week. 7. What makes my blood boil is Paul's ignorant manner. 8. We have now over eighty employees, most of whom are below thirty. 9. I will stand by you whatever happens. 10. What was the reason for which Mr Lackey resigned? 11. Were you the last person that saw the woman alive? 12. Venice, whose streets are often flooded, is located in a lagoon. 13. What they need is a safe place where they can settle down. 14. It is Michael who has scored the most points, not you. 15. The obstacles that hinder the research are not easy to overcome.

Str. 227 Zdania okolicznikowe czasu - Adverbial clauses of time

- I. 1. until 2. Immediately 3. by the time 4. since 5. as long as 6. before 7. Once
8. After 9. when 10. The sooner
- II. 1. receive/have received, will pay/am going to pay 2. arrives/has arrived 3. will give, obtain/have obtained 4. are, will you buy 5. go, will have 6. will you do/are you going to do, retire/have retired 7. have decorated, will make/am going to make 8. graduate/have graduated, will set up/am going to set up 9. comes, will ask/am going to ask 10. lands/has landed, will be inspected/are going to be inspected/are inspected 11. goes, will rush 12. disperse/have dispersed, will see/are going to see 13. will not set/are not going to set, are carried out/have been carried out 14. pronounce 15. will be, fly/are flying
- III. 1. The UN forces will not leave until there's a lasting peace in the area. 2. I had hardly fallen asleep when the phone rang. 3. When he is eighteen, Thomas will inherit his father's fortune. 4. The employees will resume working (only) after their wages are paid/have been paid. 5. By the time the guests arrive, we will have got everything ready. 6. She had no sooner put on her new stilettos than one heel got broken. 7. I will put my baby to bed before I do the washing. 8. While she was skiing down the slope, Judith fell down and sprained her ankle. 9. The moment I press the green button, the machine will start. 10. It is two years since Mr Sellers last went to the cinema.

Str. 231 Zdania okolicznikowe celu - Adverbial clauses of purpose

- I. 1. for 2. to 3. for 4. for, to 5. for 6. To 7. for 8. to 9. to 10. for 11. to 12. for 13. to 14. to 15. for

- II.** 1. (h) so that the dogs cannot come inside the house. 2. (d) so as to be well prepared for her exam. 3. (f) so as to avoid meeting my ex-husband. 4. (b) so that it wouldn't go stale. 5. (j) so that the neighbours will not spy on us. 6. (a) so that the boss would see his dedication. 7. (c) so as to reconsider all these propositions. 8 (i) so that everyone can hear me well. 9. (g) so that no more inmates will break away 10. (e) so as to pay back their son's debts.
- III.** 1. I gave Sue my address so that she will/can write to me regularly. 2. Garry ran all the way so as not to miss his school bus. 3. I won't put my saving in the bank in case it is /should be robbed. 4. Grease the hinges so that they will not creak. 5. The officers use trained dogs in order to find smuggled drugs. 6. Water the flowers regularly so that they will not wither. 7. The opera singer cancelled her concert in case she lost/should lose her voice. 8. Michael has taken a day off so as to have a rest. 9. The hunters were walking very quietly in order not to scare the deer away. 10. Many families adopt orphans so that they will/may know that there's still a lot of love in this world.

Str. 234 Zdania okolicznikowe wynikowe - Adverbial clauses of result

- I.** 1. so 2. So 3. such 4. so 5. such 6. so 7. such 8. So 9. so 10. such
- II.** 1. Bonzo was so fine a dog that we miss him a lot. 2. The book is so good that I cannot stop reading it/It is so good a book that I cannot 3. So many points did Roger score that he won the first place. 4. The trick is so difficult that only an experienced conjurer can perform it./It is so difficult a trick that only an experienced 5. The solution was so drastic that nobody agreed to implement it./It was so drastic a solution that nobody
- III.** 1. The shop assistant made such a rude remark that the client got offended. 2. She was such a beautiful girl that I could not take my eyes off her. 3. He had such a bad headache that he could hardly fall asleep. 4. It was such a harsh sound that I felt pain in my ears. 5. Mark is such a conscientious worker that he takes care of every single detail.

Str. 237 Zdania okolicznikowe przyczyny - Adverbial clauses of reason

- I.** 1. Our baby has caught a bad cold, so we're giving her the antibiotics. 2. Due to too little rain, our crops have been wasted. 3. Because she has so many daily duties, Gina tends to forget about the arrangements she makes. 4. The fish keep dying because of the water pollution. 5. The celebrations were cancelled for the whole country was in mourning. 6. Since she could not/was not able to speak Russian, she found it hard to communicate. 7. Seeing that he was going to faint, we laid him on the floor and put his feet up. 8. With a number of bad decisions, the government lost its popularity.
9. The village inhabitants had to be evacuated owing to the volcano eruption. 10. Due to the outbreak of the war in the Middle East, the prices of petrol went up. 11. Nobody voted for the party in the election, therefore it was dissolved. 12. As he had got stuck in a traffic jam, Mr Hicks didn't arrive on time. 13. Because of a bad flu infection,

Mike had to go to hospital. 14. The country economy was ruined for the reforms were not effective. 15. The woman wanted to cover up for her husband, so she lied in court.

Str. 241 Zdania okolicznikowe ugody - Adverbial clauses of concession

- I. 1. Though 2. while 3. though 4. even though 5. however 6. No matter 7. Much as 8. While 9. However 10. In spite of
- II. 1. Whereas Chris is very sociable, his twin brother, Andy, is rather introverted.
2. However long your job interview takes, don't show a sign of weariness. 3. Despite being busy, Alison agreed to help me with the mathematical problem. 4. Even though we made every effort to satisfy the client's expectations, he was still displeased.
5. No matter what you hear in court, don't make any comments aloud. 6. Much as I admire his skill, I'm not going to give him a steady employment. 7. In spite of a thick fog, the airport authorities didn't cancel any flights. 8. However hard the puzzle may have sounded, Simon solved it with ease. 9. Irritated as/though she seemed to be, she didn't say a word. 10. Although Terry ran as fast as he could, he didn't achieve the expected result.

Str. 242 PROGRESS TEST Zdania okolicznikowe - Adverbial clauses

- I. 1. b/d 2. d 3. b/d 4. b/d 5. a/d 6. c 7. d 8. a/d 9. d 10. a/b/c/d
- II. 1. was doing, was polishing 2. living 3. will/can not run 4. take, (will) have 5. will not leave, says/has said 6. (had) subsided, got 7. to continue 8. eating 9. have stopped 10. will not improve, sign/have signed
- III. 1. By the time my boss returns, I will have completed the report. 2. Proud as/though she may be, I like her a lot. 3. The device was so expensive that we had to take a loan to buy it. 4. It is two years since Sammy has driven a lorry. 5. The moment all the overdue bills have been paid, the electricity will be switched on. 6. I keep the keys in my hand all the time in case I (should) lose them. 7. Even though the day was windy and cold, the holidaymakers went to the beach. 8. He put the muzzle on the dog's mouth so that the dog will/can not bite anybody. 9. However tired Gina was, she didn't lose her concentration. 10. In spite of the fact that she didn't love the man, she agreed to marry him.

Str. 246 Inwersja - Inversion

- I. 1. b 2. a 3. a 4. b 5. a 6. b 7. a 8. b 9. a 10. a
- II. 1. had the concert begun, went off 2. does Harry travel 3. could they prevent 4. took, did I see 5. does he care 6. did Monica consider 7. did I realize 8. Mrs Wiggs threatened, did she receive 9. does Mr Andrews work 10. has the bacteria caused
- III. 1. till/until 2. when 3. circumstances 4. nor/neither 5. Only 6. sooner 7. So 8. account 9. hardly/scarcely 10. Such

- IV.** 1. No longer do we rent rooms. 2. Only when we met the villagers, did we realize we had crossed the border. 3. Never before had I played in a casino. 4. Only if Tina undergoes the treatment will she combat the infection. 5. Nowhere else will you see such wonderful landscapes. 6. Not till she calmed down could we understand what the woman was saying. 7. Should you come across that old album, let me know.
8. No sooner had I gone to bed than the door bell rang. 9. In no circumstances may the information be leaked to the press. 10. Seldom are whales seen in this part of the world. 11. Not for one moment did I think of resigning. 12. So low was the temperature that the mountaineers had to wear face masks. 13. Hadn't it been for your involvement, the negotiations would have collapsed. 14. Hardly had he been released from prison when he committed another crime. 15. Not until last month did we learn our daughter was pregnant. 16. At no time has his career been exposed to a greater danger. 17. Such was the politician's embarrassment that he didn't know what to say.
18. Were I to sign the agreement, I would discuss its conditions with my lawyer first.
19. Only by selling it to a larger corporation could we save the company. 20. On no account may the vault be left unlocked.

Str. 260 Przedimki - Articles

- I.** 1. a 2. - 3. the 4. the 5. the 6. a 7. The 8. the 9. a 10. the 11. an 12. - 13. - 14. the 15. - 16. the 17. a 18. the 19. the 20. - 21. - 22. - 23. a 24. a 25. a 26. the 27. the 28. (the) 29. a 30. the
1. - 2. a 3. - 4. the 5. - 6. the 7. The 8. - 9. the 10. - 11. - 12. a 13. an 14. - 15. - 16. - 17. the 18. - 19. the 20. the
- II.** 1. The, the, the, the 2. an, the, - , the 3. The, the, a, a, -, the 4. a, a, The, the, the 5. - , a, a, a, the, a 6. an, the, the, the, the 7. The, the, - , - , an, - , the, the, The, - , the, the, - 8. the, an, the, the, the, the, the, - , the, - 9. - , - , the, the, the, the, - , (the), the, the, the 10. the, - , - , the, a, - , the, -
- III.** 1. the, - , the 2. The, -/some/the, the, the, - 3. -/some, the 4. the, the, - , - , a/one, a 5. - , a, - 6. the, - , - , the 7. the, a, - 8. A/One/Some, the, the 9. -/Some, the, the, - , - 10. a/one, a/the 11. A, the, the 12. - , the, - 13. The, a, the, the 14. - , the, - , the 15. the, the, - , the, the, - 16. The, the, -/some, - , the, The 17. the, the, a 18. - , - , the, the, a, - , - , the 19. a, (the), - , the 20. the, - , the, -
- IV.** 1. the, an, - , the 2. the, - , the, a, - 3. -/some , a/one, the, the 4. a/one, - , the, - , - 5. a, the, the, a/some/the 6. a, the 7. (the), - , the, - 8. the, the, - 9. - , - , - , - 10. the, the, - , the, the

Gramatyka angielska dla zaawansowanych to książka dla wszystkich, których ambicją jest pogłębienie znajomości struktur języka angielskiego oraz opanowanie trudniejszych lub szczególnych zastosowań. Książka stanowi połączenie kompendium wiedzy o zaawansowanej gramatyce języka angielskiego oraz zbioru praktycznych zadań, umożliwiających sprawdzenie na bieżąco postępu w nauce.

- Obszerne kompendium w języku polskim
- Przykłady ilustrujące zasady użycia konstrukcji
- Szeroki zakres praktycznych ćwiczeń
- Doskonała pomoc w nauce na poziomie FCE oraz CAE
- Pełny klucz z odpowiedziami do zadań



Doskonałym uzupełnieniem niniejszego kompendium wiedzy o gramatyce jest pozycja zatytułowana:

SŁOWNICTWO ANGIELSKIE DLA ZAAWANSOWANYCH

Książka ta zawiera obszerny materiał ćwiczeniowy, składający się z 26 działów poświęconych rozmaitym kategoriom leksykalnym. Niezwykle szeroki wachlarz ćwiczeń na poziomie FCE oraz CAE umożliwia naukę przydatnego słownictwa.

ISBN 978-83-60238-39-4